Nissaye

(p-c-e)Bhikkhunipatimokkha

比丘尼波提木叉

(巴漢英對照及文法分析)

from Chattha Savgayana (CS)

Released by Dhammavassarama

2552 B.E. (2008.7.A.D.)

比丘尼波提木叉 (巴漢英對照及文法分析) [目 錄]

標示 '*' 只有在比丘尼波提木叉, 不在比丘波提木叉

'*' only in Bhikkhunipatimokkha, not in Bhikkhupatimokkha

Pubbakaranam-4(預備工作(凹填))	8
Pubbakiccam-5(前置作業(五項))	8
Pattakalla-avga-4(時機成熟的成分(四項))	
Nidanuddeso因緣	
Parajikuddeso驅擯戒	4
1.Methunadhammasikkhapadam不淨行(=Bhikkhu Parajiko 1)	
2.Adinnadanasikkhapadam偷盜(超過五個摩沙迦) (=Bhikkhu Parajiko 2)	
3. Manussaviggahasikkhapadam奪取人命(=Bhikkhu Parajiko 3)	
4.Uttarimanussadhammasikkhapadam(妄稱得)上人法(=Bhikkhu Parajiko 4)	
*5.Ubbhajanumandalikasikkhapadam(鎖骨以下、)膝蓋以上(撫摸等)	
6.Vajjappaticchadikasikkhapadam覆藏罪(不告大眾某比丘尼犯驅擯) (=Bhikkhu P 64	
*7.Ukkhittanuvattikasikkhapadam追隨被罷黜(之比丘)	
*8.Atthavatthukasikkhapadam八事驅擯	
Savghadisesuddeso僧殘戒	
*1.Ussayavadikasikkhapadam訴訟	
*2.Corivutthapikasikkhapadam(接受)賊女受戒	
*3.Ekagamantaragamanasikkhapadam獨往村(等)	
*4.Ukkhittaka-osaranasikkhapadam(將)被罷黜者復權	
*5.Bhojanapatiggahanapathamasikkhapadam接受食物(1)	
*6.Bhojanapatiggahanadutiyasikkhapadam接受食物(2)	
7.Sabcarittasikkhapadam作媒人(=Bhikkhu Savghadiseso 5)	
8.Dutthadosasikkhapadam惡意、瞋恨(無憑據地毀謗比丘尼) (=Bhikkhu Savghadises	
9.Abbabhagiyasikkhapadam拿關涉它案作藉口(毀謗爲犯驅擯) (=Bhikkhu Savghadis	
*10.Sikkhampaccacikkhanasikkhapadam 拾學(等)	
*11.Adhikaranakupitasikkhapadam停止瞋恨	
*12.Papasamacarapathamasikkhapadam惡行(1)	
*13.Papasamacaradutiyasikkhapadam惡行(2)	
14.Savghabhedakasikkhapadam分裂僧團(=Bhikkhu Savghadiseso 10)	
15.Bhedanuvattakasikkhapadam與分裂僧團的比丘同黨(=Bhikkhu Savghadiseso11).	
16.Dubbacasikkhapadam惡名望(=Bhikkhu Savghadiseso 12)	
17.Kuladusakasikkhapadam惡行敗壞在家人(=Bhikkhu Savghadiseso 17)	
Nissaggiyapacittiya捨懺戒	
Pattavaggopathamo缽品第一	
*1.Pattasannicayasikkhapadam回積鉢	
*2.Akalacivarabhajanasikkhapadam以非時衣(爲時衣而)分配	
*3.Civaraparivattanasikkhapadam交換衣(之後奪回)	
*4.Abbavibbapanasikkhapadam索求(更索求)	
*5.Abbacetapanasikkhapadam購某物(後換購某物)	
*6.Pathamasavghikacetapanasikkhapadam僧伽購某物(1)	
*7.Dutiyasavghikacetapanasikkhapadam僧伽購某物(2)	
*8.Pathamaganikacetapanasikkhapadam大眾購某物(1)	
*9.Dutiyaganikacetapanasikkhapadam大眾購某物(2)	
*10.Puggalikacetapanasikkhapadam個人購某物(1)	
Civaravaggodutiyo衣品第二	
*11.Garupavuranasikkhapadam求重衣者(最高可值四個「康沙」)	
*12.Lahupavuranasikkhapadam求輕衣者(最高可值兩個半「康沙」)	
13.Kathinasikkhapadam迦提那(捨後,額外的布最多可存十天) (=Bhikkhu NP 1)	
14.Udositasikkhapadam離開三衣過夜(=Bhikkhu NP 2)	
I 1944 19—2 40—100 — -)	

15.Akalacivarasikkhapadam非時衣(=Bhikkhu NP 3)	49
16.Abbatakavibbattisikkhapadam(向沒有親戚關係者)乞求衣(=Bhikkhu NP 6)	50
17. Tatuttarisikkhapadam接受非親戚在家人的布料(=Bhikkhu NP 7)	
18.Pathama-upakkhatasikkhapadam(指定非親戚在家人)準備布料(1) (=Bhikkhu NP 8)	
19.Dutiya-upakkhatasikkhapadam(指定非親戚在家人)準備布料(2) (=Bhikkhu NP 9)	
20.Rajasikkhapadam向保管衣資者索取布料(=Bhikkhu NP 10)	
Pattavaggotatiyo缽品第三	58
21.Rupiyasikkhapadam接受金銀(=Bhikkhu NP 18)	
22.Rupiyasamvoharasikkhapadam買賣金銀(=Bhikkhu NP 19)	
23.Kayavikkayasikkhapadam買賣物品(=Bhikkhu NP 20)	
24.Unapabcabandhanasikkhapadam以未滿五綴(的缽換新缽) (=Bhikkhu NP 22)	
25.Bhesajjasikkhapadam七日藥(儲存最多儲存七天) (=Bhikkhu NP 23)	
26.Civara-acchindanasikkhapadam(贈衣後)奪回衣(=Bhikkhu NP 25)	
27.Suttavibbattisikkhapadam乞求紗線(請織工們織成布料) (=Bhikkhu NP 26)	
28.Mahapesakarasikkhapadam(未受請而請)織工織布(=Bhikkhu NP 27)	
29.Accekacivarasikkhapadam急施衣(存放超過做衣服的時間) (=Bhikkhu NP 28)	
30.Parinatasikkhapadam轉移(僧團的物品轉爲己有) (=Bhikkhu NP 30)	
Suddhapacittiya(百六十六波逸提法)	
Lasunavaggopathamo蒜品第一	
*1.Lasunasikkhapadam(吃)蒜	
*2.Sambadhalomasikkhapadam(剃除)陰毛	
*3.Talaghatakasikkhapadam掌摑	
*4.Jatumatthakasikkhapadam(使用)樹膠生支	
*5.Udakasuddhikasikkhapadam以水洗淨(密處)	
*6.Upatitthanasikkhapadam伺候(作飯的比丘)********************************	
7.Amakadhabbasikkhapadam(乞或令乞)生穀 *8. Potkawa wasansakaddan saikkhanadam 秦士伊(第八)	
*8.Pathama-uccarachaddanasikkhapadam棄大便(等)(1) *9.Dutiya-uccarachaddanasikkhapadam棄大便(等)(1)	
*10.Naccagitasikkhapadam(往觀聽)舞蹈、唱歌	
Rattandhakaravaggodutiyo暗夜品第二	
*11.Rattandhakarasikkhapadam暗夜(與男人一對一站著交談)	
*12.Paticchannokasasikkhapadam隱密處(與男人一對一站著)交談	
*13.Ajjhokasasallapanasikkhapadam空地(與男子一對一站著)交談	
*14.Dutiyika-uyyojanasikkhapadam打發友伴離去	
*15.Anapucchapakkamanasikkhapadam不告(主人)而離去	
*16.Anapuccha-abhinisidanasikkhapadam不告(主人)而入座	
*17.Anapucchasantharanasikkhapadam不告(主人)而鋪床座	
*18.Para-ujjhapanakasikkhapadam(因誤解、誤會而)激怒他人	
*19.Para-abhisapanasikkhapadam咒詛他人	
*20.Rodanasikkhapadam(打自己而)哭泣	
Naggavaggotatiyo裸體品第三	
*21.Naggasikkhapadam裸體(沐浴)	
22.Udakasatikasikkhapadam沐浴衣(=Bhikkhu P 91)	
*23.Civarasibbanasikkhapadam(拆解某比丘尼衣之後)縫衣	
*24.Savghaticarasikkhapadam(過五日,不)穿僧伽梨	
*25.Civarasavkamaniyasikkhapadam穿著不能確定之衣	
*26.Ganacivarasikkhapadam妨礙大眾(得衣)	
*27.Patibahanasikkhapadam阻擋(如法分配衣)	
28.Civaradanasikkhapadam贈衣(給無家者等)	
*29.Kala-atikkamanasikkhapadam(期待未確定之衣而)過衣時	
*30.Kathinuddharasikkhapadam(阻擋如法)取消迦絺那(利益)	
Tuvattavaggocatuttho分享品第四	
*31.Ekamabcatuvattanasikkhapadam(兩人)同睡一床	74

100 F1 11 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1	- 4
*32.Ekattharanatuvattanasikkhapadam(兩人)同蓋一被	
*33.Aphasukaranasikkhapadam(對比丘尼故意)惱亂	
*34.Na-upatthapanasikkhapadam不伺候(同住之生病比丘尼)	
*35.Nikkaddhanasikkhapadam(給住屋後,瞋怒不喜即)趕走	
*36.Samsatthasikkhapadam(與居士)住得親近	
*37.Antoratthasikkhapadam在國內(有危險,卻不結伴而行)	
*38.Tiroratthasikkhapadam在國外(有危險,卻不結伴而行)	
*39.Antovassasikkhapadam於雨期中遊行	
*40.Carikanapakkamanasikkhapadam(雨安居後,)不出遊行	
Cittagaravaggopabcamo畫室品第五	. 78
*41.Rajagarasikkhapadam參觀王宮(等)	78
*42.Asandiparibhubjanasikkhapadam享用長椅(等)	78
*43.Suttakantanasikkhapadam紡紗	78
*44.Gihiveyyavaccasikkhapadam為在家人作事	78
*45.Adhikaranasikkhapadam平息(諍事)	79
46.Bhojanadanasikkhapadam(親手)給食(=Bhikkhu P 41)	
*47.Avasathacivarasikkhapadam月華衣(繼續使用)	
*48.Avasathaviharasikkhapadam不捨住處(而出遊)	
*49.Tiracchanavijjapariyapunanasikkhapadam遍學畜生咒	
*50.Tiracchanavijjavacanasikkhapadam教畜生咒	
Aramavaggochattho僧園品第六	
*51.Aramapavisanasikkhapadam(未經同意而)進入比丘僧園	
*52.Bhikkhu-akkosanasikkhapadam辱罵比丘	
*53.Ganaparibhasanasikkhapadam責罵大眾	01
*54.Pavaritasikkhapadam已受邀請	
*55.Kulamaccharinisikkhapadam慳俗家	
• • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • •	
56.Abhikkhukavasasikkhapadam無比丘住處(入安居) *57.Anguarangaildhagadam(於三型條件) 共行自治	
*57.Apavaranasikkhapadam(於二部僧中)未行自恣	
58.Ovadasikkhapadam(不爲)教誡或共住而往	
*59.Ovadupasavkamanasikkhapadam(應於比丘僧)問布薩及求教誡	
*60.Pasakhejatasikkhapadam肢節生癰瘡(單獨給男子作醫療)	
Gabbhinivaggo sattamo孕婦品第七	
*61.Gabbhinisikkhapadam令孕婦(受具戒)	
*62.Payantisikkhapadam令有幼兒之婦女(受具戒)	
*63.Pathamasikkhamanasikkhapadam(令未二年學六法戒之)式叉摩那受具戒(1)	
*64.Dutiyasikkhamanasikkhapadam(未得許可令二年學六法戒之)式叉摩那受具戒(1).	
*65.Pathamagihigatasikkhapadam有性行爲的女人受具戒者(1)	
*66.Dutiyagihigatasikkhapadam有性行爲的女人受具戒者(2)	
*67.Tatiyagihigatasikkhapadam有性行爲的女人受具戒者(3)	
*68.Pathamasahajivinisikkhapadam不教護弟子(1)	
*69.Pavattininanubandhanasikkhapadam不隨(師)學	
*70.Dutiyasahajivinisikkhapadam不教護弟子(2)	86
Kumaribhutavaggoatthamo童女品第八	87
71.Pathamakumaribhutasikkhapadam童女受具戒者(1) (=Bhikkhuni P 65)	
*72.Dutiyakumaribhutasikkhapadam童女受具戒者(2)	
*73.Tatiyakumaribhutasikkhapadam童女受具戒者(3)	
*74.Unadvadasavassasikkhapadam未滿十二夏(令人受具戒)	
*75.Paripunnadvadasavassasikkhapadam滿十二夏(令人受具戒)	
*76.Khiyyanadhammasikkhapadam事後抱怨	
*77.Pathamasikkhamananavutthapanasikkhapadam不使式叉摩那受具戒(1)	
*78.Dutiyasikkhamananavutthapanasikkhapadam不使式叉摩那受具戒(2)	
*79.Sokavasasikkhapadam陷入幽怨(的式叉摩那使受具戒)	
*80.Ananubbatasikkhapadam(令父母及丈夫)未聽許(之式叉摩那受具戒)	
*81.Pariyasikasikkhapadam由別住者(承諾式叉壓那受具戒)	90

*82.Anuvassasikkhapadam年年(使受具戒)	90
*83.Ekavassasikkhapadam一年(度兩人受具戒)	91
Chattupahanavaggonavamo持傘著履品第九	91
*84.Chattupahanasikkhapadam持傘著履	
*85.Yanasikkhapadam乘車	
*86.Savghanisikkhapadam纏腰布	
*87.Itthalavkarasikkhapadam穿戴婦女裝飾物	
*88.Gandhavannakasikkhapadam塗香、施粉	
*89.Vasitakasikkhapadam塗香粉、油粉	
*90.Bhikkhuni-ummaddapanasikkhapadam使比丘尼揉(或按摩)	
*91.Sikkhamana-ummaddapanasikkhapadam使式叉摩那揉(或按摩)	
*92.Samaneri-ummaddapanasikkhapadam使沙彌尼揉(或按摩)	
*93.Gihini-ummaddapanasikkhapadam使白衣女揉(或按摩)	
*94.Anapucchasikkhapadam(於比丘前)不問而坐	
*95.Pabhapucchanasikkhapadam(未得許可而)問比丘	
*96.Asamkaccikasikkhapadam不著僧祇支(入村)	
Musavadavaggodasamo妄語品第十	
97.Musavadasikkhapadam妄語(=Bhikkhu P 1)	
98.Omasavadasikkhapadam辱罵(=Bhikkhu P 2)	
99.Pesubbasikkhapadam誹謗(=Bhikkhu P 3)	
99.Pesubbasikkiapadamishasi(-Blinkkiu F 3)	
100.1 adasodnamnasikknapadam(與未受具足戒)同床睡覺(1) (=Bhikkhu P 5)	
101.Fatilatinasahaseyyasikkhapadam(與男人)同床睡覺(2) (=Bhikkhu P 6)	
103.Dhammadesanasikkhapadam說法(超過五六句) (=Bhikkhu P 7)	
103.Dhahinnadesanasikkhapadam競点(超過几个可) (=Biikkhu F /)	
105.Dutthullarocanasikkhapadam(告訴未受具比丘尼的)重罪(=Bhikkhu P 9)	
106.Pathavikhananasikhapadam挖掘土地(=Bhikkhu P 10)	
Bhutagamavaggoekadasamo植物品第十一	
107.Bhutagamasikkhapadam(砍伐)植物(=Bhikkhu P 11)	
108.Abbavadakasikkhapadam轉移其它話題(顧左右而言他) (=Bhikkhu P 12)	
109.Ujjhapanakasikkhapadam(公開)指責(=Bhikkhu P 13)	
110.Pathamasenasanasikkhapadam以具(不收就離開)(一) (=Bhikkhu P 14)	
111.Dutiyasenasanasikkhapadam以具(不收就離開)(二) (=Bhikkhu P 15)	
112.Anupakhajjasikkhapadam擠開(先到僧房的比丘尼) (=Bhikkhu P 16)	
113.Nikka dd hanasikkhapadam趕人出房(=Bhikkhu P 17)	
114. Vehasakutisikkhapadam閣樓(使用可拆卸的床椅) (=Bhikkhu P 18)	
115.Mahallakaviharasikkhapadam(建造)大房子(=Bhikkhu P 19)	
116.Sappanakasikkhapadam有生物的水(澆到草或地上) (=Bhikkhu P 20)	
Bhojanavaggodvadasamo食品第十二	
117.Avasathapindasikkhapadam在公共施食處(取食一次) (=Bhikkhu P 31)	
118.Ganabhojanasikkhapadam眾食(四人以上一起受邀吃飯) (=Bhikkhu P 32)	101
119.Kanamatusikkhapadam瞎女(未分享糕點或乾餅) (=Bhikkhu P 34)	
120.Vikalabhojanasikkhapadam非時食(=Bhikkhu P 37)	102
121.Sannidhikarakasikkhapadam儲存(超過正午的食物) (=Bhikkhu P 38)	
122.Dantaponasikkhapadam	
123.Uyyojanasikkhapadam(托缽途中),趕走同伴(=Bhikkhu P 42)	
124.Sabhojanasikkhapadam有情欲的人家(=Bhikkhu P 43)	
125.Rahopaticchannasikkhapadam單獨與男人坐在隱蔽處(=Bhikkhu P 44)	
126.Rahonisajjasikkhapadam單獨與男人共坐(=Bhikkhu P 45)	
Carittavaggoterasamo拜訪品第十三	104
127.Carittasikkhapadam(用餐前後到其他人家)拜訪(=Bhikkhu P 46)	104
128.Mahanamasikkhapadam向摩訶男居士(索求供養) (=Bhikkhu P 47)	
129.Uyyuttasenasikkhapadam(往觀)出征的軍隊(=Bhikkhu P 48)	
130.Senavasasikkhapadam軍中住(=Bhikkhu P 49)	

131.Uyyodhikasikkhapadam(住車中觀)演習(=Bhikkhu P 50)	106
132.Surapanasikkhapadam喝穀酒(等) (=Bhikkhu P 51)	106
133.Avgulipatodakasikkhapadam手指搔癢(=Bhikkhu P 52)	106
134.Hasadhammasikkhapadam(水中)嬉戲(=Bhikkhu P 53)	106
135.Anadariyasikkhapadam不恭敬(=Bhikkhu P 54)	107
136.Bhimsapanasikkhapadam嚇驚(比丘尼) (=Bhikkhu P 55)	107
Jotivaggocuddasamo點火品第十四	107
137.Jotisikkhapadam點火(取暖) (=Bhikkhu P 56)	
138.Nahanasikkhapadam洗澡(半個月超過一次) (=Bhikkhu P 57)	
139.Dubbannakaranasikkhapadam(新衣染)難看的顏色(=Bhikkhu P 58)	
140.Vikappanasikkhapadam分享衣服(對方沒有捨出就使用) (=Bhikkhu P 59)	
141.Apanidhapanasikkhapadam藏匿比丘尼衣缽(等)(=Bhikkhu P 60)	
142.Sabciccasikkhapadam故意(奪命) (=Bhikkhu P 61)	
143.Sappanakasikkhapadam有生物(的水) (=Bhikkhu P 62)	
144.Ukkotanasikkhapadam擾亂(明知已經依法處置的案件) (=Bhikkhu P 63)	
145.Theyyasatthasikkhapadam與賊隊相約(=Bhikkhu P 66)	
146.Aritthasikkhapadam殘酷的(主張淫欲不會障礙修行) (=Bhikkhu P 68)	
Ditthivaggopannarasamo邪見品第十五	
147.Ukkhittasambhogasikkhapadam.中止共食(=Bhikkhu P 69)	
148.Kantakasikkhapadam障礙(法) (=Bhikkhu P 70)	
149.Sahadhammikasikkhapadam依法(規勸) (=Bhikkhu P 71)	
150.Vilekhanasikkhapadam迷惑小小學處(=Bhikkhu P 72)	
151.Mohanasikkhapadam(不因)無知(而開脫罪狀) (=Bhikkhu P 73)	
152.Paharasikkhapadam打(比丘尼) (=Bhikkhu P 74)	
153.Talasattikasikkhapadam(舉)掌作武器(=Bhikkhu P 75)	
154.Amulakasikkhapadam無憑無據地(毀謗比丘尼) (=Bhikkhu P 76)	
155.Sabciccasikkhapadam故意(導致比丘尼追悔) (=Bhikkhu P 77)	
156.Upassutisikkhapadam(比丘尼諍論後)竊聽(=Bhikkhu P 78)	
Dhammikavaggosolasamo依法品第十六	
157.Kammappatibahanasikkhapadam拒絕羯磨(=Bhikkhu P 79)158.Chandam-adatvagamanasikkhapadam沒有表明同意(如法羯磨) (=Bhikkhu P 80)	
159.Dubbalasikkhapadam批評如法分配衣服(=Bhikkhu P 81)	
160.Parinamanasikkhapadam轉移(供養) (=Bhikkhu P 82)	
161.Ratanasikkhapadam寶物(=Bhikkhu P 84)	
163.Mabcapithasikkhapadam新床或長板凳(=Bhikkhu P 87)	
164.Tulonaddhasikkhapadam鋪蓋棉花(在床或長板凳上) (=Bhikkhu P 88) 165.Kanduppaticchadisikkhapadam覆瘡衣(=Bhikkhu P 90)	
166.Nandasikkhapadam難陀(比丘尼叫人做衣服超過善逝衣尺寸) (=Bhikkhu P 92)	
-	
Patidesaniya八應悔過戒(八提舍尼法)	
*1.Sappivibbapanasikkhapadam(無病)索求酥	
*2.Telavibbapanasikkhapadam(無病)索求油	
*3.Madhuvibbapanasikkhapadam(無病)索求蜜	
*4.Phanitavibbapanasikkhapadam(無病)索求糖蜜	
*5.Macchavibbapanasikkhapadam(無病)素求魚肉	
*6.Mamsavibbapanasikkhapadam(無病)素求肉*******************************	
*7.Khiravibbapanasikkhapadam(無病)索求乳	
*8.Dadhivibbapanasikkhapadam(無病)索求酪	
Sekhiya應當學習的戒(=Bhikkhu sekhiya 1~75)	
Parimandalavaggopathamo圓整品第一	129
1.~2.Parimandalasikkhapadam圓整(穿內裙)	
3.~4.Suppaticchannasikkhapadam整齊包好(衣服)	
5~6 Susamyutasikkhanadam 守護威儀	129

7.~8.Okkhittacakkhusikkhapadam垂目而視	
9.~10.Ukkhittakasikkhapadam不拉高(衣服)	130
Ujjagghikavaggodutiyo大笑品第二	131
11.~14.Ujjagghikasikkhapadam大笑	
Uccasaddasikkhapadam大聲戒	
15.~16.Kayappacalakasikkhapadam不晃動身體	
17.~18.Bahuppacalakasikkhapadam不揮擺手臂	
19.~20.Sisappacalakasikkhapadam搖頭晃腦	
Khambhakatavaggotatiyo扠腰品第三	
21.~22.Khambhakatasikkhapadam扠腰	
<u> </u>	
23.~24.Ogunthitasikkhapadam包著頭	
25.Ukkutikasikkhapadam以腳尖或腳踵	
26.Pallatthikasikkhapadam抱住膝蓋27.Sakkaccapatiggahanasikkhapadam感激接受	
<u>. </u>	
28.Pattasabbinipatiggahanasikkhapadam注視缽接受	
29. Samasupakapatiggahanasikkhapadam接受成比例的羹飯	
Sakkaccavaggocatuttho感激品第四	
31.Sakkaccabhubjanasikkhapadam感激	
32.Pattasabbinibhubjanasikkhapadam注視缽吃	
33.Sapadanasikkhapadam順序地(用餐)	
34.Samasupakasikkhapadam等(比例)菜	
35.Nathupakatasikkhapadam不從頂端揉捏食物而吃	
36.Odanappaticchadanasikkhapadam覆藏飯	
37.Supodanavibbattisikkhapadam要求飯菜	
38.Ujjhanasabbinisikkhapadam心存不滿(注意他人的缽)	
39.Kabalasikkhapadam(不做過大的)飯糰	
40.Alopasikkhapadam─□(食物)	
Kabalavaggopabcamo飯糰品第五	
41.Anahatasikkhapadam未拿來(張口待食)	137
42.Bhubjamanasikkhapadam食時(勿放整個手指入嘴)	
43.Sakabalasikkhapadam含飯糰(說話)	
44.Pindukkhepakasikkhapadam投入食物(入口)	
45.Kabalavacchedakasikkhapadam咬斷飯糰	
46.Avagandakarakasikkhapadam(大口)張頰(吃)	
47.Hatthaniddhunakasikkhapadam甩手地(吃)	
48.Sitthavakarakasikkhapadam飯粒散落	
49.Jivhaniccharakasikkhapadam舌頭伸出	
50.Capucapukarakasikkhapadam作咀嚼聲	
Surusuruvaggochattho囌囌品第六	139
51.Surusurukarakasikkhapadam(吃時)作囌囌聲	139
52.Hatthanillehakasikkhapadam舔手(吃)	139
53.Pattanillehakasikkhapadam不舔缽	
54.Otthanillehakasikkhapadam不舔嘴唇	
55.Samisasikkhapadam沾過食物(的手)	
56.Sasitthakasikkhapadam含飯粒(任意倒棄)	
57.Chattapanisikkhapadam手(拿)遮陽傘	
58.Dandapanisikkhapadam手(拿)拐杖	
59.Satthapanisikkhapadam手(拿)刀	
60.Avudhapanisikkhapadam手(拿)武器	
Padukavaggosattamo涼鞋品第七	141
61.Padukasikkhapadam穿涼鞋	141
62.Upahanasikkhapadam穿鞋子	141

63.Yanasikkhapadam坐在車上	141
64.Sayanasikkhapadam躺在床上	142
65.Pallatthikasikkhapadam抱住膝蓋坐著	142
66.Vethitasikkhapadam綁頭巾	142
67.Ogunthitasikkhapadam包住頭	142
68.Chamasikkhapadam坐位子	
69.Nicasanasikkhapadam坐高位	143
70.~71.Thitasikkhapadam坐著	143
Pacchatogacchantisikkhapadam 走在前面(等)	143
72.Uppathenagacchantisikkhapadam(靠著)路邊走	
73.Thita-uccarasikkhapadam站著大(小)便	144
74.Harite-uccarasikkhapadam在農作物上大(小)便	144
75.Udake-uccarasikkhapadam在水上大(小)便	144
Adhikaranasamatha解決案件的規則(=Bhikkhu Adhikarana samatha 1~7)	146
1.當面法則 (Adhikarana samatha 2.)	146
2.憶念法則 (Adhikarana samatha 2.)	146
3.不再痴狂的法則 (Adhikarana samatha 3.)	146
4.自白 (Adhikarana samatha 4.)	147
5.服從多數 (Adhikarana samatha 5.)	147
6.處罰犯罪的人 (Adhikarana samatha 5.)	147
7.取銷 (Adhikarana samatha 7.)	

$(p\hbox{-} c\hbox{-} e) \\ \textbf{Bhikkhunipatimokkha}$

比丘尼波提木叉 (巴漢英對照及文法分析)檔案說明

本檔參照李鳳媚居士《巴利律比丘戒譯注》,及釋宗戒的《比丘波羅提木叉》。 比丘尼獨有的戒條由明法比丘翻譯及注釋。英語採用 Bhikkhu Thanisaro:

The Bhikkhuni Patimokkha 的譯文,其中未譯出的部分,參照 Ven. Banamoli

Thera: The Patimokkha

Pubbakaranam-4(預備工作(四項))

Sammajjani padipo ca, udakam asanena ca: 掃帚(f.) 燈(m.) 及 水(n.) 座位(n.s.Ins.) 及

Uposathassa etani, **"pubbakaranan"**ti vuccati. 布薩的 這些(p.Nom.) 預備工作 稱爲

掃帚、燈、水、及座位,此等為布薩之預備工作。

Pubbakiccam-5(前置作業(五項))

Chanda, parisuddhi, utukkhanam, bhikkhuniganana ca ovado; (與)欲(=請假) 清淨 季節(utu+akkhana) 比丘尼 算數 及 教誡

> Uposathassa etani, **"pubbakiccan"**ti vuccati. 布薩的 這些(p.Nom.) 預備作業 稱爲

與欲、清淨、季節宣告、算比丘尼人數、教誡,此等爲布薩之前置作業。

Pattakalla-avga-4(時機成熟的成分(四項))

Uposatho, yavatika ca bhikkhuni kammappatta; 布薩 僅僅 及 比丘尼 羯磨 達到

Sabhagapattiyo ca na vijjanti; 同區的 應到達(出席) 及 不 (他們)存在

Vajjaniya ca puggala tasmim na honti, "**pattakallan**"ti vuccati. 應被避開的 及 諸人 在這些 無 有 達成預備好的 稱為

還有,布薩,及比丘尼來到羯磨,沒有犯同分之罪及 應被避開的不出席,這樣就是時機成熟。

Pubbakarana-pubbakiccani
準備工作samapetva
完成後desitapattikassa
指出samaggassa
和合bhikkhunisavghassa anumatiyapatimokkham uddisitum aradhanam karoma.

比丘尼僧團的 同意,許可 波提木叉 背誦 邀請 (我們)作

預備工作、前置作業完成之後, 擯除犯戒者, 和合, 經比丘尼僧團的同意, 邀請背誦波提木叉。

~ ~ ~

Namo tassa bhagavato arahato sammasambuddhassa.

Bhikkhunipatimokkhapali

比丘尼波提木叉

Nidanuddeso 因緣

Sunatu	me	ayye	savgho.	Ajj'uposatho	pannaraso (catuddasa ²).
聽	我	大姐	僧團	今日 布薩	第十五 (第十四)
sunati	aham	ayye	savgha	ajja uposatha	pannarasa, pabcadasa
3s.imp.	1s.Dat.	f.p.Voc.	m.s.Nom.	ind. m.s.Nom.	m.s.Nom.

諸大姐!請僧團聽我(說)。今天是第十五(十四)日的布薩。

Lady, let the Savgha hear me. Today is the Uposatha of the Fifteenth(fourteenth).

Yadi savghassa pattakallam, savgho uposatham kareyya patimokkham uddiseyya.

如果	僧團	已完成 準備	曾 僧團	布薩	作	波提木叉	誦
yadi	savgha	patta+kalla	savgha	uposatha	karoti	patimokkha	uddisati
ind.	m.s.Gen.	n.s.Nom.	m.s.Nom.	m.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	m.s.Acc.	3s.opt.

如果僧團已經準備好了,僧團就可舉行布薩、誦波提木叉。

If there is complete preparedness for the Savgha carry out the Uposatha, let it recite the Patimokkha.

Kim	savghassa	pubbakico	cam?	Parisuddhim	ayyayo	arocetha.
什麼	僧團	之前	做	清淨	大姐	宣告
ka	savgha	grd. of pubba+l	caroti	parisuddhi		aroceti
n.s.Nom.	m.s.Gen.	n.s.N	om.	f.s.Acc.	f.p.Voc.	2p.imp.

僧團事前應做什麼?諸大姐!請宣告清淨。

What of preliminary duty for the Savgha? Let the ladies announce (any declaration of) purity (given to them by absent bhikkhunis).

Patimokkham uddisissami, tam sabbeva santa sadhukam sunoma manasikaroma.

波提木叉	將誦	它	所有 強調詞	現存	穩善地	聽	作意 注意
patimokkha	uddisati	ta	sabba+eva	ppr. of atthi	sadhuka	sunati	manasikaroti
m.s.Acc.	1s.fut.	m.s.Acc.	ind.	ppr.(m.p.N	lom.) adv.	1p.imp.	1p.imp.

我將誦波提木叉,讓我們所有在場的僧眾都好好地注意聽它。

I shall recite the Patimokkha. Let all present listen and attend carefully.

1

¹ Paci.IV,214(CS:pg.275): Tatra yayam bhikkhuni samaggena ubhatosavghena batticatutthena kammena akuppena thanarahena upasampanna, ayam imasmim atthe adhippeta bhikkhuniti.(此中,依和合的二部僧,白四羯摩,無異議通過受具之比丘尼,即此處所謂的比丘尼之意。

² 如果第十五日誦戒爲pannaraso,第十四日誦誡爲catuddasa。

Yassa	siya	a patti	i, sa	avikareyya	, asantiy a	apattiya	tunhi	bhavitabbam,
彼	有	犯戒	她	發露 表白	沒有	犯	沈默	變成
ya	atthi	apajjati	ta	avi+karoti	a+ santa	apajjati	tunhi	grd. of bhavati
f.s.Gen. 3	s.opt.	f.s.Nom.	f.s.Nom.	3s.opt.	f.s.Ins.	f.s.Ins.	ind.	f.s.Nom.

如果有犯戒的人就要發露懺悔;沒有犯的人應該保持沈默。

Should anyone have (committed) no fault, let her declare it. Should she have (committed) no fault, let her keep silent.

Tunhi	bhavena	kho į	oan'ayyayo	parisuddha'ti	vedissami.
沈默	保持	而	大姐	清淨	知道
tunhi	bhava< bhu	kho	pana	parisuddha +iti	vedati
ind.	m.s.Ins.	adv.	f.p.Acc.	pp.(m.p.Nom.) ind.	1s.fut.

就因爲保持沈默,我將知道諸大姐「是清淨的」。

I shall by their silence know that the ladies are pure.

Yatha	kho	pan	a paccekaputthassa		veyyakaranam	hoti,
如同	而	-	各別	被問的	回答	有
yatha	kho	pana	pacceka+ <pucchati< th=""><th>veyyakarana</th><th>< hu</th></pucchati<>		veyyakarana	< hu
ind.	ind.			f.s.Gen.	n.s.Nom.	3s.pr.

如同各別被問的人會回答,

Just as one who is questioned individually has an answer (ready),

evam evam		n evam	evarupay	a paris <mark>a</mark> y	anussavitam	hoti.		
	百	樣地	這樣的	集會	多達	第三的	宣布	有
	evam	evam	eva+rupa	parisa	yava+ tatiyam		pp. of anu+ saveti	< hu
	ind.	ind.	f.s.Loc.	f.s.Loc.		adv.	m.s.Nom.	3s.pr.

就像那樣,在這樣的集會中有多達三次的宣布。

so too, (the Patimokkha) having been proclaimed three times in such an assembly (as this),

```
Ya pana
           bhikkhuni yavatatiyam anussaviyamane
                                                           saramana
                                                                         santim
                                                                                   apattim
     連接詞 比丘尼
                        直到
                                            官布
                                                               記得
                                                                            有
                                                                                      犯
ya pana
           bhikkhuni
                      yava+tatiyam
                                     pass.ppr. of anu+ saveti
                                                           ppr. of sarati
                                                                        ppr. of atthi
                                                                                     apajjati
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.
                          adv.
                                            m.s.Loc.
                                                             f.s.Nom.
                                                                           f.s.Acc.
                                                                                     f.s.Acc.
```

而到了第三次宣布時,如果任何比丘尼記得(曾犯戒)而不發露(懺悔)有犯,

any lady when it is (so) proclaimed three times, who fails to declare an actual (undeclared) fault on remembering

```
n'avikareyya, sampajanamusavad'assa hoti.

不 發露 故意 妄語 語 她 是
na+avi+karoti sampajana+ musa+vada ta < hu
3s.opt. adj. m.s.Nom. f.s.Gen. 3s.pr.
```

她就是故意妄語。

it is guilty of false speech in full awareness,

Sampajanamusavado kho pan'ayyayo, antarayiko dhammo vutto Bhagavata. 所說 世尊 故意 妄語 障礙 事項 sampajana+musa+vada kho pana antarayika dhamma pp. of vuccati Bhagavant adj. ind. adv. f.p.Voc. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. m.s.Ins. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom.

諸大姐!而世尊說:故意妄語就是障礙(修行)的事情。

The ladies, false speech in full awareness has been pronounced by the Blessed One to be a thing obstructive (to progress);

Tasma saramanaya bhikkhuniya apannaya visuddapekkhaya santi apatti avikatabba, 因此 發露、表白 記得 比丘尼 期待 sarati of ppr. bhikkhuni apajjati visuddha + apekkha atthi apajjati avi+karoti ta pp. adj.(f.s.Ins.) ppr.(f.s.Nom.) f.s.Nom. grd. (f.s.Nom.) m.s.Abl. f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins. pp.(f.s.Ins.)

因此,記得曾犯戒的比丘尼希望清淨就應該發露(懺悔)有犯。

therefore any actual (undeclared) fault should be declared by a lady who remembers to have committed it and who looks for purification.

avikata phasu hi'ssa hoti. 表白 真的 這(=她) 安樂 有 avi+karoti phasu < hu hi + assa f.s.Gen. pp.(m.s.Abl.) ind. m.s.Nom. 3s.pr.

因爲發露懺,她才有安樂。

To have declared it is for her good.

諸大姐!因緣已經誦出了。

The ladies, the recitation of the Introduction is finished.

Tatth'ayyayo pucchami: Kacci'ttha parisuddha? 這裡 諸大姐 我問 是否 於此 清淨 tattha pucchati kacci ettha pp. of parisujjhati adv. adv. f.p.Acc. 1s.pr. ind. m.p.Nom.

在這裡我問諸大姐:「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨?」

Herein I ask the ladies: Are you pure in this?

Dutiyam'pi pucchami: Kacci'ttha parisuddha? 第二 批 問 是否 於此 清淨 pp. of parisujjhati duttayam + api pucchati ettha kacci m.s.Acc. ind. adv. m.p.Nom. 1s.pr. ind.

第二次我再問:「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨?」

For the second times I ask the ladies: Are you pure in this?

pucchami: Kacci'ttha parisuddha? Tatiyam'pi

第三 於此 清淨 pucchati ettha pp. of parisujjhati tatiyam + api kacci m.s.Acc. ind. 1s.pr. adv. m.p.Nom. ind.

第三次再問:「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨?」

For the third times I ask the ladies: Are you pure in this?

Parisuddh'etth'ayyayo, tasma tunhi, evam dharayami. etam

清淨 在此 大姐 因此 沈默 如此 這 認為 parisuddha+ettha dharati ta tunhi evam pp.(m.p.Nom.) adv. f.p.Nom. m.s.Abl. adv. adv. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr.

諸大姐!於此(類戒)是清淨的,所以默然。我如此認定這件事。

The ladies are pure herein; that is why they are silent. So do I record it.

~Nidanam nitthitam.~

Parajikuddeso 驅擯戒

Tatrime	attha	parajika	dhamma	uddesam	agacchanti.
這裡 這	八	驅擯	規則	誦	來
tatra + ime	attha	parajika	dhamma	udesa < ud-disati	agacchati
adv. m.p.Nom.		m.p.Nom.	m.p.Nom.	m.s.Acc.	3p.pr.

在這裡,到了誦出這八驅擯戒。

Here the Eight Rules of Defeat come up for recitation.

- 1.Methunadhammasikkhapadam 不淨行(=Bhikkhu Parajiko 1)
- 1. Ya pana bhikkhuni chandaso methunam dhammam patiseveyya antamaso 任何 比丘尼 欲 交媾 行爲 從事 乃至 ya pana bhikkhuni chanda methuna dhamma patiseveti antamaso f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Abl. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adv.
- 一、若比丘尼,由於欲望,從事不淨行¹,

tiracchanagatenapi, asamvasa. parajika hoti

雌性動物 也 驅擯 是 不 共住 tiracchana+gata api parajika < hu a+samvasa f.s.Ins. adv. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.) 3s.pr.

即使與雄性動物,犯驅擯、不共住2。

¹ Para.III,24.(CS:pg.28):「不淨行(淫欲法):任何非正法、村民法、賤民法、猥褻的、(淫)水的、秘密、雙雙達 到三摩缽地(性高潮),這是淫欲法。」

² Paci.IV,214 (CS:pg.277):「(波羅夷):如斷頭之男人,以他的身軀不能活命。如是,比丘尼有染心,接受有染 心男子由鎖骨以下、膝蓋以上,撫摸、或碰觸、或捉、或捺、或抱,非沙門女、非釋迦女。這樣稱爲'驅擯'。」

- 1. Should any bhikkhuni willingly engage in sexual intercourse, even with a male animal, she is defeated and no longer in affiliation.
- 2.Adinnadanasikkhapadam 偷盜(超過五個摩沙迦) (=Bhikkhu Parajiko 2)
 - bhikkhuni gama va arabba va adinnam theyyasavkhatam 2.Ya pana adivevva. 任何 比丘尼 村莊 或 森林 不 給予 偷盜 取 bhikkhuni gama va arabba <a+dadati theyya+<savkhayati adiyati ya va pana f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Abl. conj. m.s.Abl. conj. m.s.Acc. n. pp.(m.s.Acc.) 3s.opt.
 - 二、若比丘尼以偷盜的意圖,從村落¹或阿蘭若²拿了未被給予的東西,
 - 2. Should any bhikkhuni, in what is reckoned a theft, take what is not given from an inhabited area or from the wilderness

yatharupe adinnadane bandheyyum va rajano coram gahetva haneyyum va 如彼 這樣 不給予 (偷)拿 或 監禁 王 盜賊 抓 殺 yatharupa <a-dadati+adana bandhati rajan ganhati hanati cora va va adj.(n.s.Loc.) pp. n.s.Loc. m.p.Nom. m.s.Acc. ger. 3p.opt. conj. 3p.opt. conj.

如同偷拿了這樣的未被給的東西時,國王們抓到盜賊後,或處死1、或囚禁、

「不共住:共住是同一羯摩,同一說戒,同學,這樣稱爲'共住'。她不跟她在一起,這樣稱爲'不共住'。」

- ■兩人俱有染心,由鎖骨以下、膝蓋以上,身與身相摩者,驅擯。以身摩身上物者,犯偷蘭遮。以著身之物摩身者,犯偷蘭遮。以著身之物摩著身之物者,犯突吉羅。以離手之物摩身者,犯突吉羅。以離手之物摩離手之物,犯突吉羅。
- ■(兩人俱有染心,)由鎖骨以上、膝蓋以下:身與身相摩者,犯偷蘭遮。以身摩身上物者,犯突吉羅。以著身之物摩身者,犯突吉羅。以著身之物摩著身之物者,犯突吉羅。以離手之物摩身者,犯突吉羅。以離手之物摩離手之物,犯突吉羅。
- ■一人有染心,由鎖骨以下、膝蓋以上,身與身相摩者,犯偷蘭遮。以身摩身上物者,犯突吉羅。以著身之物 摩身者,犯突吉羅。以著身之物摩著身之物者,犯突吉羅。以離手之物摩身者,犯突吉羅。以離手之物摩離 手之物,犯突吉羅。
- ■(一人有染心,)由鎖骨以上、膝蓋以下:身與身相摩者,犯突吉羅。以身摩身上物者,犯突吉羅。以著身之物摩身者,犯突吉羅。以著身之物摩著身之物者,犯突吉羅。以離手之物摩身者,犯突吉羅。以離手之物摩離手之物,犯突吉羅。
- ■兩人俱有染心,夜叉、或餓鬼、或黃門、或具有人形之畜生,由鎖骨以下、膝蓋以上,身與身相摩者,犯偷 蘭遮。以身摩身上物者,犯突吉羅。以著身之物摩身者,犯突吉羅。以著身之物摩著身之物者,犯突吉羅。 以離手之物摩身者,犯突吉羅。以離手之物摩離手之物,犯突吉羅。
- ■(兩人俱有染心,夜叉、或餓鬼、或黃門、或具有人形之畜生,)由鎖骨以上、膝蓋以下:身與身相摩者,犯突吉羅。以身摩身上物者,犯突吉羅。以著身之物摩身者,犯突吉羅。以著身之物摩著身之物者,犯突吉羅。以離手之物摩身者,犯突吉羅。以離手之物摩離手之物,犯突吉羅。
- ■一人有染心,(夜叉、或餓鬼、或黃門、或具有人形之畜生,)由鎖骨以下、膝蓋以上,身與身相摩者,犯突吉羅。以身摩身上物者,犯突吉羅。以著身之物摩身者,犯突吉羅。以著身之物摩著身之物者,犯突吉羅。以離手之物摩身者,犯突吉羅。以離手之物摩離手之物,犯突吉羅。
- ■(一人有染心,夜叉、或餓鬼、或黃門、或具有人形之畜生,)由鎖骨以上、膝蓋以下:身與身相摩者,犯突吉羅。以身摩身上物者,犯突吉羅。以著身之物摩身者,犯突吉羅。以著身之物摩著身之物者,犯突吉羅。以離手之物摩身者,犯突吉羅。以離手之物摩離手之物,犯突吉羅。
- ¹ Para.III,46(CS:pg.56):「村落:有一屋村落,有二屋村落,有三屋村落,有四屋村落,有人村落,有無人村落,有圍牆村落,無圍牆村落,有牛舍等的村落,有商隊住四個月以上的村落,以上稱爲村落。」
 - 「**村落近郊**:有圍牆之村落,人站在村門中,丟石頭所落之處:於無圍牆之住家,人站在住家門中,丟石頭 所落之處。」
- ² Para.III,46(CS:pg.57):「阿蘭若:村落及村落近郊之外,稱爲阿蘭若。」《分別論》(Vibh.p.251.):「於帝柱之外,一切都爲阿練若。」Samantapasadika(一切歡喜, Sp.p.301.):「至少要有五百弓(一弓約四肘長)的距離才名阿練若。」

just as when, in the taking of what is not given, kings arresting the criminal would flog, imprison,

pabbajeyyum balasi mulhasi thenasiti. va. corasi 小偷 是 (引號) 驅逐 或 盜賊 是 笨蛋 是 愚痴 pabbajeti cori+ asi bala +asi mulha+asi theni+ asi+ iti va conj. f.s.Nom.(2s.pr.) f.s.Nom.(2s.pr.) pp.(f.s.Nom.)(2s.pr.) f.s.Nom. (2s.pr.) ind. 3p.opt.

或放逐 2 ,說:「妳是盜賊、笨蛋、痴人、小偷。」

or banish her, saying, "You are a robber, you are a fool, you are benighted, you are a thief"

tatharupam bhikkhuni adinnam adiyamana; ayam'pi parajika hoti asamvasa. 如此 這樣 比丘尼 不 給予 驅擯 是 不 共住 取 tatharupa bhikkhuni a+dadati adiyati parajika < hu a+samvasa ayam api adj.(m.s.Acc.) f.s.Nom. pp.(m.s.Acc.) ppr.(f.s.Nom.) f.s.Nom. ind. adj.(f.s.Nom.) 3s.pr. adj.(f.s.Nom.) 像那樣,比丘尼偷了未被給予的東西³,這也犯驅擯,不共住。⁴

a bhikkhuni in the same way taking what is not given is defeated and no longer in affiliation.

- 3.Manussaviggahasikkhapadam 奪取人命(=Bhikkhu Parajiko 3)
 - 3. Ya pana bhikkhuni sabcicca manussaviggaham jivita voropeyya, 任何 比丘尼 故意 生命 奪取 bhikkhuni <sabcinteti ya namussa + viggaha jivita voropeti pana f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. ger. (adv.) m.s.Acc. m.s.Abl. 3s.opt.
 - 三、若比丘尼故意5奪取人的生命6,
 - 3. Should any bhikkhuni intentionally deprive a human being of life,

satthaharakam vassa pariyeseyya, maranavannam va samvanneyya, maranaya va samadapeyya, 武器 攜帶 或 它 遍求 死亡 美好 或 盛讚 死亡 煽動 sattha+haraka va+assa pariyesati marana+vanna sam-vanneti samadapeti va marana va n. m.s.Acc. conj. m.s.Dat. 3s.opt. n. m.s.Acc. conj. 3s.opt. m.s.Dat. conj. 3s.opt.

或是爲她尋找攜帶武器的人,或是盛讚死亡的美好,或是煽動自殺,說:

or search for an assassin for him, or praise the advantages of death, or incite him to die, saying,

 $^{^1}$ Para.III,46(CS:pg.57):「或處死:或以手、或以足、或以鞭、或以棒、或以半杖、或斷肢刑而殺死。」

² Para.III,46(CS:pg.57):「**放逐**:放逐於村外、或鄉外、或城外、或省外、或國外。」

³ Para.III,46(CS:pg.57):「不給予:凡是不給予,非捨棄物,非永遠捨棄物,被守護之物,被人珍愛,他人所有物,此稱爲「不給予」。」「取:奪、取去、盜、搞壞原位(威儀路)、脫離本處、等候於某特定的地方(而取)。」

⁴ Para.III,55(CS:pg.69):「不犯(偷)之想:親厚想、暫借、鬼物、畜生擁有物、垃圾想;癡狂想、心亂者、惱痛者、最初之犯行者。」

⁵ Para.III,73(CS:pg.92):「故意:由知、由認識、確知而存心違犯。」Paci.IV,215(CS:pg.279):「不犯者:非故意者、失念者、無知者、不受(樂)者、癡狂者、心亂者、痛惱者、(佛世)最初犯行者。」

⁶ Para.III,73(CS:pg.92):「人體:凡是第一心已被生在母的子宮者,第一識已出現;直至死時,於其中間,這稱爲'人體'。」

"Ambho purisa kim tuyh'imina papakena dujjivitena, matam jivita sevvo"ti. te 你 這 可憐 生命 死 她們(=妳) 活 更好 (引號) ambho purisa tvam ayam du + jivita marati tvam j**i**vita seyya papaka ind. m.s.Voc. m.s.Nom. s.Dat. m.s.Ins. m.s.Ins. m.s.Ins. pp.(m.s.Nom.) p.Nom. m.s.Abl. m.s.Nom. ind.

「嘿!人呀!這個悲苦的生命對你有什麼(用)呢?對於你,死比活著更好。」

"My good man, what use is this evil, miserable life to you? Death would be better for you than life,"

anekapariyayena maranavannam iti cittamana cittasavkappa va samvanneyya, 如此 心 思惟 種種的 方法 或 盛讚 11 citta+manas citta+savkappa aneka pariyaya marana + vanna samvanneti va f.s.Nom. n. f.s.Nom. adj. m.s.Acc. conj. 3s.opt.

有這樣的心意和心思1,用各種方法盛讚死亡的美好,

or with such an idea in mind, such a purpose in mind, should in various ways praise the advantages of death,

maranaya va samadapeyya; ayam'pi parajika hoti asamvasa.

死亡 煽動 不 共住 或 這 11 marana va samadapeti ayam api parajika < hu a + samvasa n.s.Dat. conj. 3s.opt. f.s.Nom. ind. adj.(f.s.Nom.) 3s.pr. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

或是煽動自殺,這也犯驅擯、不共住。2

or incite him to die, she also is defeated and no longer in affiliation.

- 4.Uttarimanussadhammasikkhapadam(妄稱得)上人法(=Bhikkhu Parajiko 4)
- 4. Ya pana bhikkhuni anabhijanam uttarimanussadhammam

任何 比丘尼 沒有 證知 超越 人 法 ya pana bhikkhuni an+abhijanati uttari+manussa+dhamma f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. pp.(m.s.Acc.) adv. m. m.s.Acc.

四、若比丘尼沒有證知而聲稱自己有超越凡人的法3、

4. Should any bhikkhuni, without direct knowledge, boast of a superior human state,

(5) 自己勸人(眾生)去死,或教別人去勸人(眾生)去死,或寫書、撰文勸死。

若是給糖、蜜等,而想:「吃這個當死。」則犯突吉羅;若產生痛苦,則犯偷蘭遮;若致死,則犯波羅夷。

[「]行動」(vayamati努力)而符合殺罪,列舉以下數項:

⁽¹⁾ 自手殺生,或對方因此墮死,或隔一段時間才死。

⁽²⁾ 唆教人去殺生,而自己在旁觀。

⁽³⁾ 遣使人殺生。遣使人去殺某人,或被遣者輾轉遣他人去殺。

⁽⁴⁾ 懸賞殺人,或唆使人懸賞殺人。

⁽⁶⁾ 給人(眾生)毒藥或殺具,此人(眾生)因此自盡;或下毒在眼、耳、鼻、身上、瘡中;或給墮胎藥;或以咒術殺生('明(咒)'所作 vijjamaya);或以神變所作(殺)(iddhimaya)。

² Para.III,78(CS:pg.99): 「不犯:無意圖、無知、無意圖致死者、癡狂者,最初之犯行者。」

³ Para.III,91(CS:pg.117):「超越凡人的法(上人法):禪那(初禪乃至第四禪)、解脫(空、無相、無願)、三昧(空、無相、無願)、正受(三摩缽地,空、無相、無願)、智見(三明)、修道(指四聖諦等三十七菩提分)、證果(證初果乃至四果)、斷染(斷染瞋癡)、心離蓋(離染瞋癡)、心樂空屋(樂在初禪乃至第四禪)。」

attupanayikam alamariyabanadassanam samudacareyya: "Iti janami, iti passami"ti, 適合 神聖 知識 聲稱 知道 如此 看見 (引號) 如此 alam+ariya+bana+dassana passami + iti <attan+upa-neti sam+ud-a-carati iti ianati iti n.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. ind. 1s.pr. ind. 1s.pr. ind.

足堪聖者的知識和洞見,說:「我知道這樣,我見到這樣。」

a truly noble knowledge and vision as present in herself, saying, "Thus do I know; thus do I see,"

asamanuggahiyamana tato aparena samayena samanuggahiyamana va va 時候 從此 或 或 不 apara samaya sam+anu-gahati a+sam-anu-gahati va va m.s.Abl. m.s.Ins. m s Ins ppr.(f.s.Nom.) ppr.(f.s.Nom.) conj. conj.

從此以後,不管被詢問或未被詢問,

such that regardless of whether or not she is cross-examined on a later occasion,

visuddhapekkha evam vadeyya, "ajanamevam, ayye, ayacam, 'janami' apanna 犯戒 清淨 如此 不 知道 如此 大姐 說 <pp. of apajjati visujjhati+apekkhati</p> vadeti evam a+jananta<ppr. of janati+evam a+vacati f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. adv. 3s.opt. s.Nom. adv. f.p.Voc. 1s.aor. 1s.pr.

希望淨化曾犯的人1,她這樣說:「大姐!我不知道而如此地說我知道、

she — being remorseful and desirous of purification — might say, "Ladies, not knowing, I said I know;

'passami'. Tuccham vilapin" ti, abbatra adhimana, apassam, musa 不 見到 虚僞 除了 增上慢 虚妄 妄說 a+passanta<ppr. of passati passati tuccha vilapim + iti abbatra adhi-mana musa m.s.Abl. 1s.pr. adj.(s.Acc.) s.Acc. adv. s.Nom.

沒見到而說我見到,我虛偽地妄說。」除了高估自己外,

not seeing, I said I see — vainly, falsely, idly," unless it was from over-estimation, she also is defeated and no longer in affiliation.

ayam'pi parajika hoti asamvasa. 這 也 驅擯 是 不 共住 ayam api parajika < **hu** a+samvasa f.s.Nom. ind. adj.(f.s.Nom.) 3s.pr. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

這也犯驅擯、不共住。2

she also is defeated and no longer in affiliation.

¹ 希望淨化:希望成爲女居士,希望成爲優婆夷,希望成爲女淨人,希望成爲沙彌尼。(cf. Paci.IV,92; CS:pg.118)

 $^{^2}$ Para.III,100(CS:pg.138):「不犯:增上慢、無意圖的說溜嘴者、癡狂者、心亂者、痛惱者、最初之犯行者。」

- *5.Ubbhajanumandalikasikkhapadam(鎖骨以下、)膝蓋以上(撫摸等)
- 5. Ya pana bhikkhuni avassuta purisapuggalassa, avassutassa 任何 比丘尼 充滿欲望 充滿欲望的 男人 補伽羅 pana bhikkhuni avassuta avasuta purisa + puggala f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(m.s.) pp.(m.s.Gen.) m. m.s.Gen.

五、若比丘尼,有染心1,接受有染心男子2,

5. Should any bhikkhuni, lusting, consent to a lusting man's

adhakkhakam ubbhajanumandalam amasanam va paramasanam va gahanam va chupanam va 以上 膝 一個圓周的 觸摸 抓持、碰觸 或 拿、抓 或 adha-akkhaka ubbha + janu+mandalika amasana paramasana gahana chupana n.s.Gen. ind. n. adj.(n.s.Acc.) n.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. n.s.Acc.

由鎖骨以下、膝蓋以上,撫摸、或碰觸、或捉、或捺、

rubbing, rubbing up against, taking hold of, touching, or fondling (her) below the collar-bone and above the circle of the knees,

patipilanam va sadiyeyya, ayampi parajika hoti asamvasa ubbhajanumandalika. 抱、壓迫 膝蓋 接受 共住 以上 patipilana sadiyati< (sad 坐+i+ya) ayam api parajika a+samvasa ubbha + janu + mandalika n.s.Acc. f.s.Nom. adj.(f.s.Nom.) 3s.pr. adj.(f.s.Nom.) ind. n. adj.(n.s.Acc.)

或抱³者,這也犯驅擯、不共住,膝蓋以上(之罪的原因)。⁴

she also is defeated and no longer in affiliation for being "one above the circle of the knees."

- 6. Vajjappaticchadikasikkhapadam 覆藏罪(不告大眾某比丘尼犯驅擯) (=Bhikkhu P 64)
- 6. Ya pana bhikkhuni janam parajikam dhammam ajjhapannam bhikkhunim nevattana paticodeyya, 任何 比丘尼 明知 驅擯 犯罪過 比丘尼 (卻)沒被自己 法 ajjhapanna bhikkhuni na+eva+attana paticodeti ya pana bhikkhuni parajika jana dhamma f.s.Nom.adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. adj.(m.s.Acc.) m.s.Acc. pp.(f.s.Acc.) f.s.Acc. m.s.Ins. 3s.opt.

六、若比丘尼,明知那位比丘尼犯驅擯法而不責備其罪⁵,

6. Should any bhikkhuni, knowing that (another) bhikkhuni has fallen into an act (entailing) defeat, neither accuse her herself

 $^{^1}$ Paci.IV,214 (CS:pg.276): 「**充滿欲望的**:有依戀,有欲望,被愛所綁的。」

² Paci.IV,214 (CS:pg.276):「男補伽羅:男人,非男夜叉、非男鬼、非雄性畜生;是有智的、適當的身體的接觸與從事。」

³ Paci.IV,214 (CS:pg.277): 「接受擁抱:接受抓住肢體擠壓。」

⁴ 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1031.3)作:「從腋已下、膝已上身相觸,若捉摩、若牽、若推、若上摩、若下摩、若舉、若下、若捉、若捺,是比丘尼波羅夷、不共住,是身相觸也。」

Paci.IV,215(CS:pg.279):「不犯:無意圖、無知、無接受(樂)者、癡狂者、心亂者、痛惱者、最初之犯行者。」 ⁵ 不責備其罪: 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1031.3)作:「不自發露」。

na ganassa aroceyya, yada ca thita va nasita va avassata va, sa assa cuta va 不 告知 其後 妣 住 有 滅 驅逐 入外道 thita na gana aroceti yada ca ta assa cuta nasita avassata m.s.Nom. 3s.opt. f.s.Nom. pp.(f.s.Nom.) 3s.opt. pp.(f.s.Nom.) pp.(f.s.Nom.) f.s.Nom.

不告大眾,其後,該尼或活著、或死亡、或被驅逐、或入外道時¹,

nor inform the group, and then — whether she (the other bhikkhuni) is still alive or has died, has been expelled or gone over to another sect —

evam vadeyya "pubbevaham, paccha ayye, abbasim etam bhikkhunim sa 之後 妣 如是 大姐 比丘尼 說 sa paccha vadevva 'pubbe+aham abbasim bhikkhuni evam etam adv. 1s.Nom. f.s.Nom. adv. adv. f.s.Voc. f.s.Acc. f.s.Acc. 3s.opt. 3s.aor.

她這樣說:「大姐!我先前已知那比丘尼

she (this bhikkhuni) should say, "Even before, ladies, I knew of this bhikkhuni that

'evarupa ca evarupa ca sa bhagini'ti, no ca kho attana paticodessam, na ganassa arocessan''ti,

和 如是 姐妹 不 和 大眾 如是 自己 evarupa paticodeti gana aroceti n.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m.s.Ins. 3s.opt. m.s.Nom. 3s.opt.

如此這般,乃因是姐妹(的關係),故自己不欲責其罪,不告眾。」

'This sister is of such-and-such a sort,' and I didn't accuse her myself nor did I inform the group,"

vajjappaticchadika. ayampi parajika hoti asamvasa 驅擯 是 不 共住 這 忇 覆藏 parajika vajja +< paticchadeti (pati+chad 蓋) ayam api < hu a+samvasa f.s.Nom. ind. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.) 3s.pr.

這也犯驅擯、不共住,覆藏罪(的原因)。 2

then she also is defeated and no longer in affiliation for being "one who concealed a fault."

- *7.Ukkhittanuvattikasikkhapadam 追隨被罷黜(之比丘)
- 7. Ya pana bhikkhuni samaggena savghena ukkhittam bhikkhum dhammena vinayena 任何 比丘尼 僧伽 中止、罷黜 比丘 和合 法 律 bhikkhuni bhikkhu ya pana samagga savgha ukkhitta dhamma vinava f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.

pp.(m.s.Acc.)

m.s.Acc.

m.s.Ins.

m.s.Ins.

七、若比丘尼,追隨被和合僧依法、依律、

m.s.Ins.

7. Should any bhikkhuni follow a bhikkhu who has been suspended by a united Community (of bhikkhus) in line with the Dhamma, in line with the Vinaya,

m.s.Ins.

 1 Paci.IV,217 (CS:pg.281):「住:住世的徵兆。死:已死。被驅逐:自己已背教者,或入他教。入外道:移入外道。」

 $^{^2}$ Para.III,100(CS:pg.138):「不犯:增上慢、無意圖妄語者、癡狂者、心亂者、痛惱者、最初之犯行者。」 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1035.3):「若比丘尼知比丘尼有麤罪,覆藏者,波逸提。」

satthusasanena anadaram appatikaram akatasahayam tamanuvatteyya,

(大)師 教法不敬未納受不做 盟友這 追隨satthu+sasanaanadaraa + patikaraakata+sahayatam+anuvattetim. m.s.Ins.m.s.Acc.adj.(m.s.Acc.)pp. m.s.Acc.3s.opt.

依師教罷黜¹之不恭敬²、未納受³、不作盟友⁴之比丘者,

in line with the teacher's instructions, and who is disrespectful, has not made amends, has broken off his friendship (with the bhikkhus), the bhikkhunis are to admonish her thus:

sa bhikkhuni bhikkhunihi evamassa vacaniya "eso kho, ayye, bhikkhu samaggena savghena ukkhitto, 那 比丘尼 如是 說 這 大姐 比丘 和合 僧伽 中止、罷黜 ya bhikkhuni bhikkhuni evam + atthi vacaniya eta bhikkhu samagga savgha ukkhitta f.s.Nom.f.s.Nom. fp.Acc. adv. 3s.opt. grd.(f.s.Nom.)m.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Voc. m.s.Nom. m.s.Ins. m.s.Ins. pp.(m.s.Nom.)

該比丘尼當由諸比丘尼這樣說:「大姐!這比丘被和合僧依法、依律、

"Lady, that bhikkhu has been suspended by a united Community in line with the Dhamma, in line with the Vinaya,

dhammena vinayena satthusasanena anadaro appatikaro akatasahayo, mayye, etam bhikkhum anuvatti"ti. 法 律 (大)師 教法 不敬 未 納受 不做 盟友 勿 大姐 這 比丘 隨順 dhamma vinaya satthu+sasana anadara a+patikara akata+sahaya ma+ayye eta bhikkhu anuvatti+ ti

依師教罷黜之不恭敬、未納受、不作盟友者。大姐!勿追隨這比丘。」

in line with the teacher's instructions. He is disrespectful, he has not made amends, he has broken off his friendship. Do not follow him, lady."

Evabca bhikkhuni bhikkhun**i**hi vuccamana tath'eva pagganheyya, sa 如此和 這 比丘尼 比丘尼 勸告 如此 仍 努力 bhikkhuni bhikkhuni evam +ca ta vuccati tatha + eva pa+ganhati adv.conj. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) adv. 3s.opt.

該比丘尼被諸比丘尼這樣勸告時,仍然那樣堅持,

And should that bhikkhuni, thus admonished by the bhikkhunis, persist as before,

sa bhikkhuni bhikkhunihi yavatatiyam samanubhasitabba tassa patinissaggaya.

這 比丘尼 比丘尼 直到 勸告 它 第三 放棄 yava + tatiyam bhikkhuni bhikkhuni patinissajjati samanubhasati ta f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. grd.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Gen. m.s.Dat.

諸比丘尼應該乃至三次勸告該比丘尼放棄它。

the bhikkhunis are to rebuke her up to three times so as to desist.

¹ Paci.IV,232(CS:pg.298): 「**罷黜**(**擯**):由於不認罪、或不懺悔、或不捨惡見,而被罷黜。」

² Paci.IV,218(CS:pg.282):「**不恭敬**:輕視僧伽、別眾、人、羯摩。」

³ Paci.IV,218(CS:pg.282): 「未納受:被罷黜者未復權。」

⁴ Paci.IV,219(CS:pg.282):「**不作盟友**:同一個宗教團體的比丘稱爲盟友;他與他不同,因此稱爲不作盟友。」

Yavatatiyab'ce samanubhasiyamana tam patinissajjeyya, icc'etam kusalam.

直到 第三 如果 勸告 它 放棄 如是 那 善 yava+tatiyam + ce samanubhasati ta patinissajjati iti+ eta kusala adv. conj. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. n.s.Nom. n.s.Nom.

如果到了第三次被勸告時,(她)放棄它,那就好。如果不放棄,

If while being rebuked up to three times she desists, that is good. If she does not desist,

No ce patinissajjevya, ayampi parajika hoti asamvasa ukkhittanuvattika. 如果 放棄 這 也 不 共住 中止、罷黜 隨順 是 ce patinissajjati ayam api < hu a+samvasa ukkhitta+anuvattika adv. conj. 3s.opt. f.s.Nom. ind. 3s.pr. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

這也犯驅擯、不共住,追隨被罷黜(之比丘的原因)。1

then she also is defeated and no longer in affiliation for being "a follower of a suspended (bhikkhu)."

- *8.Atthavatthukasikkhapadam 八事驅擯
- 8. Ya pana bhikkhuni avassuta avassutassa purisapuggalassa hatthaggahanam va sadiyeyya, 任何 比丘尼 充滿欲望 充滿欲望的 男人 補伽羅 purisa + puggala sadiyati ya pana bhikkhuni avassuta avasuta hattha + gahana f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(m.s.) pp.(m.s.Gen.) m.s.Gen. m. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt.

八、若比丘尼,有染心,(1)接受有染心男子的手

8. Should any bhikkhuni, lusting, consent to a lusting man's taking hold of her hand

savghatikannaggahanam va sadiyeyya, santittheyya va, sallapeyya va, savketam va gaccheyya,

接受 站著 或 交談 或 約定的地方 或 去 僧伽梨(大衣)邊緣 捉 sallapati savghati+kanna+gahana sadivati santitthati savketa gacchati m. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. 3s.opt. 3s.opt. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt.

(2)或接受捉僧團梨衣角,(3)或站著、(4)或交談、(5)或到約定的地點、

or touching the edge of her outer robe, or should she stand with him or converse with him or go to a rendezvous with him,

purisassa va abbhagamanam sadiyeyya, channam va anupaviseyya,

男人或抵達接受蓋、遮 或 進入purisaabbhagamanasadiyatichannaanupavisati< (anu 隨+pa+vis 進入)</td>m.s.Acc.n.s.Acc.3s.opt.pp.(m.s.Acc.)3s.opt.

⁽⁶⁾或接受男子的抵達,⁽⁷⁾進入遮掩處,

or should she consent to his approaching her, or should she enter a hidden place with him,

 $^{^1}$ Paci.IV,220(CS:pg.284):「不犯:非同學者、放棄者、癡狂者、心亂者、痛惱者、最初之犯行者。」

kayam va tadatthaya upasamhareyya etassa asaddhammassa patisevanatthaya,

對那場合 相靠近 這 非 正法 跟隨 身體 kaya ta+d+attha a + saddhamma patisevana+attha upasamharati eta n.s.Acc. f.s.Ins. 3s.opt. m.s.Gen. m.s.Gen. n. m.s.Gen.

⁽⁸⁾或身體倚靠,這種跟隨非正法的情況,¹

or should she dispose her body to him — (any of these) for the purpose of that unrighteous act (Comm: physical contact) —

hoti atthavatthuka. ayampi parajika asamvasa 妣 批 驅擯 분 不 共住 ayam api < hu a+samvasa attha + vatthuka parajika m.s.Nom. ind. f.s.Nom. 3s.pr. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

她也犯驅擯、不共住,犯八事(的原因)。2

then she also is defeated and no longer in affiliation for "(any of) eight grounds."

Uddittha kho, attha parajika dhamma. ayyayo, 誦 諸大姐 驅擯 規則 < pp. of uddisati kho parajika dhamma m.p.Nom. adv. f.p.Voc. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom.

諸大姐!八驅擯的規則已經誦完了。

The ladies, the Eight Rules of Defeat have been recited,

Yesam bhikkhuni <u>abbataram va abbataram va</u> apajjitva na labhati bhikkhunihi saddhim

任何 比丘尼 不 得到 比丘尼 犯 bhikkhuni abbatara va abbatara va labhati bhikkhuni apajjati saddhim va na f.s.Nom. adj. adj.(m.s.Acc.) adv. f.p.Gen. ger. adv. 3s.pr. f.p.Ins.

比丘尼犯了其中的任何一條,就不能跟諸比丘尼住在一起,

in any one which if a bhikkhuni admits to be at fault she is no longer entitled to (live in) communion with bhikkhunis;

《四分律》卷第二十二:「於七事中。若不發露懺悔罪未除。若犯第八事波羅夷。」(T22.716.2)

¹ Paci.IV,221(CS:pg.286): (1)接受(有染心男子的)手:手,指從手肘到指端抓取。抓取鎖骨以上,膝蓋以下(的肌膚)行其非法(=染法)而享受者,犯偷蘭遮。

⁽²⁾接受捉僧伽梨衣角:接受捉取已穿著、已裹住(的僧伽梨),行其非法而享受者,犯偷蘭遮。

⁽³⁾站著:靠近男子一臂之距內,行其非法而享受者,犯偷蘭遮。

⁽⁴⁾交談:靠近男子一臂之距內站著交談,行其非法而享受者,犯偷蘭遮。

⁽⁵⁾**到約定的地點**:與男子行其非法而享受--"來到諸女的空間"就是'去',步步犯惡作(突吉羅)。靠近男人一臂之距內, 犯偷蘭遮。

⁽⁶⁾接受男子的抵達:接受男子的抵達,行其非法而享受者,犯惡作。靠近(男人)一臂之距內,犯偷蘭遮。

⁽⁷⁾進入遮掩處:(與男人)進入遮掩處,行其非法而享受者,犯偷蘭遮。

⁽⁸⁾身體倚靠:身體倚靠男人在一臂之距內站著,行其非法而享受者,犯偷蘭遮。

² 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1031.3):「若比丘尼染污心,知男子染污心受,捉手、捉衣、入屏處、共立、共語、 共行、或身相倚、或共期,是比丘尼波羅夷、不共住,犯此八事故。」

samvasam, yatha pure tatha paccha, parajika hoti asamvasa.

共住 如同 前 如同 분 不 共住 samvasati yatha pura tatha parajika a+ samvasa paccha < hu m.s.Acc. adv. m.s.Loc. adv. adv. f.s.Nom. 3s.pr. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

以後就像是從前(未成爲比丘尼)那樣,犯驅擯、不共住(的原因)。

as (she was) before (the admission) so (she is) after (the confession of the fault); she is defeated and no more in communion.

pucchami: parisuddha? Tatth'ayyyayo, Kacci'ttha 這裡 諸大姐 我問 是否 於此 清淨 tattha pucchati kacci ettha pp. of parisujjhati adv. 1s.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom. f.p.Acc.

在這裡我問諸大姐:「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨?」

Herein I ask the ladies: Are you pure in this?

Dutiyam'pi pucchami: Kacci'ttha parisuddha? 於此 清淨 第二 也 問 是否 dutiyam + api pucchati ettha pp. of parisujjhati kacci ind. m.s.Acc. ind. 1s.pr. adv. m.p.Nom.

第二次我再問:「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨?」

For the second times I ask the ladies: Are you pure in this?

pucchami: Kacci'ttha Tatiyam'pi parisuddha? 第三 也 問 是否 於此 清淨 pp. of parisujjhati tatiyam +api pucchati kacci ettha ind. adv. m.s.Acc. ind. 1s.pr. m.p.Nom.

第三次再問:「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨?」

For the third times I ask the ladies: Are you pure in this?

Parisuddh'etth'ayyayo, tunhi, evam dharayami. tasma etam 清淨 在此 大姐 因此 沈默 如此 這 認為 parisuddha ettha ta tunhi evam eta dharati pp.(m.p.Nom.) adv. f.p.Nom. m.s.Abl. ind. adv. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr.

諸大姐!於此(類戒)是清淨的,所以默然。我如此認定這件事。

The ladies are pure herein; that is why they are silent. So do I record it.

~Parajikam nitthitam.~

Savghadisesuddeso 僧殘戒

Ime kho panayyayo sattarasa savghadisesa dhamma uddesam agacchanti.

這些 又 諸大姐 誦 kho uddesati agacchati ima savghadisesa dhamma pana f.p.Voc. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. adv. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. m.s.Acc. 3p.pr.

諸大姐!現在到了誦出這十七僧殘戒。

Now, the ladies, the Seventeen Rules entailing Initial and Subsequent Meeting of the Savgha come up for recitation.

*1.Ussayavadikasikkhapadam 訴訟

1. Ya pana bhikkhuni ussayavadika vihareyya gahapatina va gahapatiputtena va

```
任何 比丘尼 訴訟 住 居士 或 居士 子 或 ya pana bhikkhuni ussayavadika viharati gahapati gahapati + putta f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(f. s.Nom.) 3s.opt. m.s.Ins. m. m.s.Ins.
```

一、若比丘尼,與居士、居士子¹、

1. Should any bhikkhuni start litigation against a householder, a householder's son,

dasena va kammakarena va antamaso samanaparibbajakenapi,

```
奴婢 或 作工者 或 乃至 沙門 遍行者 dasa kammakara samana + paribbajakena+ api m.s.Ins. adv. m. m.s.Ins. ind.
```

奴婢²、傭人、乃至沙門出家者行訴訟³,

a slave, or a worker, or even against a wandering contemplative:

ayampi bhikkhuni pathamapattikam dhammam apanna nissaraniyam savghadisesam.

```
這也 比丘尼 第一次 違犯 法 犯罪 逐出 僧殘 ayam pi bhikkhuni pathama + apattika dhamma apanna nissaraniya savghadisesa f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. pp.(f.s.Acc.) grd.(f.s.Acc.) adj.(f.s.Acc.)
```

既使這比丘尼初次犯法,也是犯應被逐出的僧殘。4

this bhikkhuni, as soon as she has fallen into the first act of offence, is to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community.

¹ Paci.IV,224(CS:pg.290): 「居士子:居士的兒子及(兒子的)兄弟。」

² Paci.IV,224(CS:pg.290):「**奴婢**(**奴隸**):在家中生的(奴婢)、買來的、擄掠的」。

³ Paci.IV,224(CS:pg.289):「訴訟:告官(爭論人事、忿怒事)。」Sp.Paci.IV,907 (CS:pg.180):「仲裁:法官裁判。 凡是涉及出家人的訴訟之語。」 akarika(=attakarika),【陰】即女訴訟當事人。

⁴ 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1032.1):「若比丘尼詣官言,居士、若居士兒、若奴、若客作人,若晝、若夜、若一念頃、若彈指頃、若須臾頃,是比丘尼犯初法應捨僧伽婆尸沙。」

Paci.IV,225(CS:pg.290):「不犯:被人強牽去者、乞求保護者、不指定人(而訴訟)、癡狂者、心亂者、痛惱者、最初之犯行者。」

*2.Corivutthapikasikkhapadam(接受)賊女受戒

2. Ya pana bhikkhuni janam corim vajjham viditam anapaloketva rajanam va 處罰 比丘尼 賊女 已知道 未 pana bhikkhuni jana corim vajjha vidita an + apaloketi raja f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom m.s.Acc. f.s.Acc. adj.(f. s.Acc.) pp.(f. s.Acc.) m.s.Acc. ger.

二、若比丘尼明知¹已被處分的賊女²,未得到王、或僧團、

2. Should any bhikkhuni knowingly give Acceptance (*upasampada*) to a woman thief sentenced to death, without having obtained permission from the king or the Community

savgham va ganam va pugam va senim va, abbatra vutthapeyya, kappa 計團 或 適切(的狀況) 使受具戒 公會 abbatra vutthapeti savgha gana puga seni kappa m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. f.s.Acc. adj. m.p.Nom. caus.(3s.opt.)

或團體、或社團、或公會的允許3,而指使受具足戒者,除了適切的狀況4,

or the (governing) council or the (governing) committee or the (governing) guild — unless the woman is allowable (i.e., already ordained in another sect or with other bhikkhunis)

ayampi bhikkhuni pathamapattikam dhammam apanna nissaraniyam savghadisesam.

這 也 比丘尼 第一次 違犯 法 犯罪 逐出 僧殘 savghadisesa ayam pi bhikkhuni pathama + apattika nissaraniya dhamma apanna f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom m.s.Acc. pp.(f.s.Acc.) grd.(f.s.Acc.) adj.(f.s.Acc.) m.s.Acc.

既使這比丘尼初次犯法,也是犯應被逐出的僧殘。5

this bhikkhuni, also, as soon as she has fallen into the first act of offence, is to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community. [See Mv.I.43.1]

¹ Paci.IV,226(CS:pg.292): 「明知:自知或他人告知。或該女自白。」

² Paci.IV,226(CS:pg.292):「**處分**:凡是已作了處分(或處死)」。」「已作了處罰」:指通緝中。「**賊女**:偷拿值五個摩沙迦或五個摩沙迦被稱爲女賊。」 Masaka,【陽】直譯:摩沙迦(當時的錢幣)。規定偷竊五摩沙迦(古譯:五錢)或五摩沙迦以上的物品構成死罪,是比照印度摩揭陀當時的國法。五個摩沙迦相當於一個pada。《五分律》 《四分律》《十誦律》皆譯爲「錢」,《僧祇律》譯爲「分」。

[《]四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1032.1):「罪應死,人所知。」

³ Paci.IV,226(CS:pg.292):「王:由王所支配,應得王之許可。僧團:由僧團所支配,應得僧團之許可。團體:由團體所支配,應得團體之許可。社團:由社團所支配,應得社團之許可。公會:由公會所支配,應得公會之許可。」
⁴ Paci.IV,227(CS:pg.292):「除了(某種)適切的狀況:適切的狀況除外。適切的狀況有二:先於外道中出家或於其它之比丘尼僧中出家者。除適切的狀況外,欲授具足戒而求僧眾、或阿闍梨、或衣、或缽、或結戒場者,犯突吉羅。白(眾)者突吉羅,二羯摩者偷蘭遮。作完羯摩者,和尙僧殘,眾僧及阿闍梨突吉羅。」

[《]四分律》卷第二十二:「不犯者。若不知。或白王大臣種姓。若罪應死王聽出家。若有罪聽出家。若於繫縛中放令出家。若救使得脫不犯。不犯者最初未制戒。癡狂心亂痛惱所纏。」(《律部 T22》p.720.1)

⁵ Paci.IV,227(CS:pg.293):「不犯:不知而使受具者、得到許可而使受具者、有適切的狀況而使受具者、癡狂者、最初之犯行者。」

*3.Ekagamantaragamanasikkhapadam 獨往村(等)

3. Ya pana bhikkhuni eka va gamantaram gaccheyya, eka va nadiparam gaccheyya,

```
村 內部
                                                                     或 河 彼岸
           比丘尼
                       單獨
                                                   去
                                                             單獨
     pana
           bhikkhuni
                                gama + antara
                                                 gacchati
                                                                         nadi+para
                                                                                      gacchati
ya
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(f.s.Acc.) m. f.s.Acc.
                                                                         f. n.s.Acc.
                                              3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Acc.)
                                                                                       3s.opt.
```

三、若比丘尼獨往村¹中,或獨渡水,

3. Should any bhikkhuni go among villages alone or go to the other shore of a river alone,

```
eka
             rattim vippavaseyya, eka va
                                                ganamha ohiyeyya,
 單獨
        或
                       離家、缺席
                                     單獨 或
                                                   大眾
                                                            逗留
 eka
              ratti
                       vippavasati
                                                  gana
                                                           ohiyati
adj.(f.s.Acc.) f.s.Acc.
                      3s.opt.
                               adj.(f.s.Acc.)
                                              m.s.Abl.
                                                         3s.opt.
```

或晚上獨宿、或離眾而獨留於後者,

or stay away for a night alone or fall behind her companion(s) alone:

ayampi bhikkhuni pathamapattikam dhammam apanna nissaraniyam savghadisesam.

```
犯罪
                      第一次
                                違犯
                                              法
                                                                       逐出
ayam pi
          bhikkhuni
                     pathama + apattika
                                             dhamma
                                                        apanna
                                                                    nissaraniya
                                                                                      savghadisesa
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom
                               m.s.Acc.
                                            m.s.Acc.
                                                       pp.(f.s.Acc.)
                                                                     grd.(f.s.Acc.)
                                                                                      adj.(f.s.Acc.)
```

既使這比丘尼初次犯法,也是犯應被逐出的僧殘。²

this bhikkhuni, also, as soon as she has fallen into the first act of offence, is to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community.

*4.Ukkhittaka-osaranasikkhapadam(將)被罷黜者復權

4. Ya pana bhikkhuni samaggena savghena ukkhittam bhikkhunim dhammena vinayena

任何		比丘尼	和合、和諧	僧團	中止	比丘尼	法	律
ya	pana	bhikkhun i	samagga	savgha	ukkhitta	bhikkhun i	dhamma	vinaya
f.s.N	om. adv	v. f.s.Nom	m.s.Ins.	m.s.Ins.	pp.(m.s.Acc.)	f.s.Acc.	m.s.Ins.	m.s.Ins.

四、若比丘尼,不知道大眾的欲願,將和合僧依法、依律、

4. Should any bhikkhuni — without having obtained permission from the Community

¹ Paci.IV,230(CS:pg.296): **Eka va gamantaram gaccheyya**ti parikkhittassa gamassa parikkhepam pathamam padam atikkamentiya apatti thullaccayassa, dutiyam padam atikkamentiya apatti savghadisesassa. Aparikkhittassa gamassa upacaram pathamam padam atikkamentiya apatti thullaccayassa. Dutiyam padam atikkamentiya apatti savghadisesassa.(或獨往村中:有圍牆的村落,第一腳跨越圍牆者,犯偷蘭遮,第二腳跨越圍牆者,犯僧殘。沒有圍牆的村落,第一腳跨越村落者,犯偷蘭遮,第二腳跨越村落者,犯僧殘。)

Eka va nadiparam gaccheyyati nadi nama timandalam paticchadetva yattha katthaci uttarantiya bhikkhuniya antaravasako temiyati. Pathamam padam uttarantiya apatti thullaccayassa. Dutiyam padam uttarantiya apatti savghadisesassa. (或獨渡水:河者,指淹沒(肚臍及兩膝)三輪。比丘尼不論於何處渡之,必弄濕下衣,第一腳渡者,犯偷蘭遮,第二腳渡者,犯僧殘。)

Eka va rattim vippavaseyyati saha arunuggamana dutiyikaya bhikkhuniya hatthapasam vijahantiya apatti thullaccayassa. Vijahite apatti savghadisesassa.(或夜晚獨宿:夜晚捨離友伴比丘尼一臂之距,至黎明即犯偷蘭 遮,已離開者,犯僧殘。)

Eka va ganamha ohiyeyyati agamake arabbe dutiyikaya bhikkhuniya dassanupacaram va savanupacaram va vijahantiya apatti thullaccayassa. Vijahite apatti savghadisesassa.(或離眾而獨留於後者:於無村落之空曠處,捨離友伴比丘尼之眼界或耳界者,已離開者,犯僧殘。)

² Paci.IV,230(CS:pg.296):「不犯:友伴比丘尼離去,或還俗,或歸外道,發生事故時,癡狂者,最初之犯行者。」

who performed the act, without knowing the desire of the group —

satthusasanena anapaloketva karakasavgham, anabbaya ganassa chandam osareyya,

(大)師 教法 不 作者 僧團 無知 大眾 anabbaya chanda osareti (ava+sar 動轉)恢復 satthu+sasana an + apaloketi karaka + savgha gana m.s.Ins. m.s.Nom. f.s.Gen. ger. m.s.Gen. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt.

依師教罷黜之不恭敬的比丘尼復權者,

restore a bhikkhuni whom a Community acting harmony in line with the Dhamma, in line with the Vinaya, in line with the teacher's instructions, has suspended:

ayampi bhikkhuni pathamapattikam dhammam apanna nissaraniyam savghadisesam.

這也 比丘尼 第一次 犯罪 逐出 違犯 法 ayam pi bhikkhuni pathama + apattika dhamma apanna nissara**ni**ya savghadisesa adj.(f.s.Acc.) f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. pp.(f.s.Acc.) grd.(f.s.Acc.)

既使這比丘尼初次犯法,也是犯應被逐出的僧殘。1

this bhikkhuni, also, as soon as she has fallen into the first act of offence, is to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community. [See Cv.I.28-29]

- *5.Bhojanapatiggahanapathamasikkhapadam 接受食物(1)
- 5. Ya pana bhikkhuni avassuta avassutassa purisapuggalassa hatthato khadaniyam va, 補伽羅 比丘尼 充滿欲望 充滿欲望的 男人 手 硬食 或 hattha khadati bhikkhuni pana avassuta avasuta purisa + puggala f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom adj.(m.s.) pp.(m.s.Gen.) m.s.Gen. m.s.Dat. grd. m.

五、若比丘尼,有染心,從有染心男子的手,接受硬食、

5. Should any bhikkhuni, lusting, having received staple

bhojaniyam va sahattha patiggahetva khadeyya va bhubjeyya va,

軟食 或 自手 接受 噉、咀嚼 或 食 bhojaniya sahattha patigganhati khadati bhubjati grd. m.s.Dat. ger. 3s.opt. 3s.opt.

接受軟食2,或親手接受而咀嚼或食用,

or non-staple food from the hand of a lusting man, consume or chew it:

ayampi bhikkhuni pathamapattikam dhammam apanna nissaraniyam savghadisesam.

這也 比丘尼 第一次 違犯 法 犯罪 逐出 僧殘 savghadisesa ayam pi bhikkhuni pathama + apattika dhamma apanna nissaraniva f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. pp.(f.s.Acc.) grd.(f.s.Acc.) adj.(f.s.Acc.)

既使這比丘尼初次犯法,也是犯應被逐出的僧殘。³

¹ Paci.IV,232(CS:pg.299):「不犯:僧伽作羯摩許可復權者,已知大眾欲使復權者,行懺悔法以復權者,僧伽作羯摩使復權時不在現場者,癡狂者,最初之犯行者。」

² Paci.IV,233(CS:pg.300):「硬食(蔬果食):除了五種穀肉食、水與楊枝(齒木)之外的一切食物。軟食(穀肉食):指飯、粥、麥、魚、肉。」

³ 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1032.2):「若比丘尼,教比丘尼作如是語,大姊!彼有染污心、無染污心,能那汝何?汝自無染污心,於彼若得食,以時清淨受取,此比丘尼犯初法應捨僧伽婆尸沙。」

Paci.IV,234(CS:pg.301):「不犯:兩人俱無染心,知無染心而受,癡狂者,最初之犯行者。」

this bhikkhuni, also, as soon as she has fallen into the first act of offence, is to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community.

*6.Bhojanapatiggahanadutiyasikkhapadam 接受食物(2)

6.Ya pana bhikkhuni evam vadeyya "kim te, purisapuggalo karissati ayye, eso 男人 比丘尼 說 如何 她們(=妳) 大姐 這 作 如是 pana bhikkhuni vadati kim purisa + puggala karoti ta ayye eta f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adv. 3s.opt. adv. 3p.Nom. f.s.Voc. m.s.Nom. m. m.s.Nom. 3s.fut.

六、若比丘尼這樣說:「大姐!若是妳沒有染心,而那男人

6. Should any bhikkhuni say, "What does it matter to you whether this man is lusting or not,

```
avassuto va anavassuto va, yato tvam anavassuta,
                                                    ivgha,
                                                              ayye,
                                                   喂、聽我說
(充滿)欲望 或 無 欲望
                        或 由於
                                 妳
                                                               大姐
avassuto
            an+avassuto
                           yato tvam
                                      an+avassuta
                                                     ivgha
m.s.Nom.
              m.s.Nom.
                                        m.s.Abl.
```

有染心或無染心又如何,聽我說,大姐!

when you are not lusting? Please, lady,

```
purisapuggalo deti khadaniyam va bhojaniyam va,
yam te eso
              男人
                     補伽羅
                               給
                                     硬食
                                                       軟食
ya so eta
              purisa+puggala
                              deti
                                    khadati
                                                      bhojaniya
                                                       ger.
f.s.Voc. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom.
                             3s.pr.
                                     ger.
```

tam tvam sahattha patiggahetva khada va bhubja va"ti,

```
噉、咀嚼
                          接受
這
      妳
              自手
                                                      食
             sahattha
                                    khadati
                                                   bhubjati
ta
     tvam
                       patigganhati
     2s.Nom. m.s.Dat.
                           ger.
                                      3s.imp.
                                                    3s.imp.
```

妳可以親手接受這男人給硬食或軟食而噉、食。」

take what the man is giving — staple or non-staple food — with your own hand and consume or chew it":

ayampi bhikkhuni pathamapattikam dhammam apanna nissaraniyam savghadisesam.

```
比丘尼
                      第一次
                                              法
                                                        犯罪
                                                                    逐出
ayam pi
          bhikkhuni
                     pathama + apattika
                                            dhamma
                                                       apanna
                                                                   nissaraniya
                                                                                     savghadisesa
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom
                              m.s.Acc.
                                          m.s.Acc. pp.(f.s.Acc.)
                                                                   grd.(f.s.Acc.)
                                                                                   adj.(f.s.Acc.)
```

既使這比丘尼初次犯法,也是犯應被逐出的僧殘。1

this bhikkhuni, also, as soon as she has fallen into the first act of offence, is to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community.

¹ Paci.IV,235(CS:pg.305):「不犯:知「無染心」而勸說者,說「瞋者不受」而勸說者,說「親族之憐愍而不受」 勸說者,癡狂者,最初之犯行者。」

- 7.Sabcarittasikkhapadam 作媒人(=Bhikkhu Savghadiseso 5)
- bhikkhuni sabcarittam samapajjeyya itthiya va purisamatim purisassa va 任何 連接詞 比丘尼 媒人 成為 女子 或 男子 ya pana bhikkhuni sabcaritta samapajjati itthi pruisa+mati purisa va f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. f.s.Dat. m. f.s.Acc. m.s.Dat. conj. conj.

七、若比丘尼成爲媒人,傳達男子的意思給女子或女子的意思給男子,

7. Should any bhikkhuni engage in conveying a man's intentions to a woman or a woman's intentions to a man, proposing marriage or paramourage — even if only for a momentary liaison:

itthimatim, jayattane va jarattane va antamaso tavkhanikaya'pi, savghadisesam. 也 妻子的性質 或 情婦的性質 或 暫時之妻 女子 主意 乃至 itthi+mati tavkhanika savghadisesa javatana va jara+tva va antamaso api n.s.Loc. conj. n.s.Loc. conj. ind. adj.(f.s.Acc.) f.s.Acc. f.s.Loc.

不論成就妻子或情婦1,乃至只是暫時之妻,犯僧殘。2

this bhikkhuni, also, as soon as she has fallen into the first act of offence, is to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community.

- 8.Dutthadosasikkhapadam 惡意、瞋恨(無憑據地毀謗比丘尼) (=Bhikkhu Savghadiseso 8)
- 8. Ya pana bhikkhuni bhikkhunim duttha dosa appatita amulakena parajikena dhammena 任何 連接詞 比丘尼 比丘尼 惠意 瞋 無 根據 不滿 驅擯 pana bhikkhuni bhikkhuni duttha dosa appatita a+mulaka parajika dhamma f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m.s.Ins. m.s.Ins. m.s.Ins.

八、若比丘尼懷著惡意、瞋恨、不滿,無憑無據地毀謗比丘尼犯驅擯戒,

8. Should any bhikkhuni — corrupt, aversive, disgruntled — charge a bhikkhuni with an unfounded case entailing defeat,

anuddhamseyya, "app'eva nama nam imamha brahmacariya caveyyan"ti, tato aparena 妣 使…脫離 毀謗 或許 這 anuddhamseti brahmacariya api + eva nama ta ima caveyyam+iti f.s.Acc. m.s.Abl. f.s.Abl. 3s.opt. 1s.opt. ind. m.s.Abl. m.s.Ins.

(心想):「或許我可因此使她脫離梵行。」

(thinking), "Perhaps I may bring about her fall from this celibate life,"

samayena samanuggahiyamana va asamanuggahiyamana va, amulakab c'eva tam 究明 時候 或 究明 或 不 根據 既 這 a+sam+anu+ganhati samaya sam+anu+ganhati va va a+mulaka ca+eva sa ppr.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Ins. conj. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) conj. m.s.Nom. adv. m.s.Nom.

從此之後,不管被詢問或未被詢問,這案件既無根據,

then regardless of whether or not she is cross-examined on a later occasion,

 $^{^1}$ Vin.(Para.III,139.;CS:pg.202):「妻子的性質:將變成妻子。情婦的性質:將變成情婦。」

² 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1032.1):「若比丘尼媒嫁,持男語語女,持女語語男,若為成婦事,若私通事,乃至須臾,是比丘尼犯初法應捨僧伽婆尸沙。」

Paci.IV,237(CS:pg.306):「不犯:非同學者,放棄者,癡狂者,最初之犯行者。」

adhikaranam hoti, bhikkhuni ca dosam patitthati,

案件 是 比丘尼 又 瞋 承認 adhikarana < **hu** bhikkhuni ca dosa patitthati n.s.Nom. 3s.pr. f.s.Nom. conj. m.s.Acc. 3s.pr.

而月比丘尼承認瞋恨,

if the issue is unfounded and the bhikkhuni confesses her aversion:

ayampi bhikkhuni pathamapattikam dhammam apanna nissaraniyam savghadisesam.

```
這 也
          比丘尼
                     第一次
                               違犯
                                                         犯罪
                                                                     逐出
                                                                                        僧殘
                                             法
ayam pi
          bhikkhuni
                    pathama + apattika
                                           dhamma
                                                                  nissaraniya
                                                                                    savghadisesa
                                                       apanna
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom
                             m.s.Acc.
                                         m.s.Acc.
                                                    pp.(f.s.Acc.)
                                                                  grd.(f.s.Acc.)
                                                                                   adj.(f.s.Acc.)
```

既使這比丘尼初次犯法,也是犯應被逐出的僧殘。1

this bhikkhuni, also, as soon as she has fallen into the first act of offence, is to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community.

- 9.Abbabhagiyasikkhapadam 拿關涉它案作藉口(毀謗爲犯驅擯) (=Bhikkhu Savghadiseso 9)
- 9. Ya pana bhikkhuni bhikkhunim duttha dosa appatita abbabhagiyassa adhikaranassa kibcidesam 任何 比丘尼 比丘尼 惡意 不滿 其他 部分、關連 pana bhikkhuni bhikkhuni duttha dosa appatita abba + bhagiya adhikarana kibci + desa f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m.s.Gen. n.s.Gen. ind. m.s.Acc.

九、若比丘尼懷著惡意、瞋恨、不滿,拿關涉到其它案件的某個點作藉口²,

9. Should any bhikkhuni — corrupt, aversive, disgruntled — using as a mere ploy an aspect of an issue that pertains otherwise,

anuddhamseyya lesamattam upadaya parajikena dhammena 瑣事、藉口 驅擯 法 毀謗 抓住 anuddhamseti lesa + matta upadaya parajika dhamma pp.(m.s.Acc.) ger. f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins. 3s.opt.

段謗爲犯驅擯戒,

charge a bhikkhuni with a case entailing defeat, (thinking),

"app'eva nama nam imamha brahmacariya caveyyan"ti, tato aparena samayena

或許 妣 洁 時 梵行 使…脫離 從此 api + eva nama ta ima brahmacariya <cavati脫離+iti samaya adv. f.s.Acc. m.s.Abl. f.s.Abl. 1s.opt. ind. m.s.Abl. m.s.Ins. n.s.Ins.

(心想):「或許我可因此使她脫離梵行。」

"Perhaps I may bring about her fall from this celibate life,"

¹ 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1032.1):「若比丘尼瞋恚不喜,以無根波羅夷法謗,欲破彼清淨行,後於異時,若問、若不問,是事無根說,我瞋恚故如是語,是比丘尼犯初法應捨僧伽婆尸沙。」

² 拿關涉到其它案件的某個點作藉口:取類似點,亂加比配。《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1032.1):「於異分事中取片」。

samanuggahiyamana va asamanuggahiyamana va, amulakab c'eva

究明或不究明或無根據和sam+anu+ganhativa a+sam+anu+ganhativa a+mulaka ca+evappr.(f.s.Nom.)conj. ppr.(f.s.Nom.)conj. adj.(m.s.Nom.) adv.

從此之後,不管被詢問或未被詢問,這案件既無根據,

then regardless of whether or not she is cross-examined on a later occasion, if the issue pertains otherwise, an aspect used as a mere ploy,

tam adhikaranam hoti. Kocideso lesamatto upadinno, bhikkhuni ca dosam patitthati,

某人 說 瑣事、藉口 生起 比丘尼 adhikarana <hu koci+deso lesamatto upadinno bhikkhuni dosa patitthati ta ca n.s.Nom. n.s.Nom. adj.(m.s.Nom.) pp.(m.s.Nom.) f.s.Nom. conj. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr. m.s.Nom. 3s.pr.

而且比丘尼承認瞋恨,

and the bhikkhuni confesses her aversion:

ayampi bhikkhuni pathamapattikam dhammam apanna nissaraniyam savghadisesam.

第一次 比丘尼 法 犯罪 涿出 ayam pi bhikkhuni pathama + apattika dhamma apanna nissaraniya savghadisesa m.s.Acc. pp.(f.s.Acc.) f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom m.s.Acc. grd.(f.s.Acc.) adj.(f.s.Acc.)

既使這比丘尼初次犯法,也是犯應被逐出的僧殘。1

this bhikkhuni, also, as soon as she has fallen into the first act of offence, is to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community.

*10.Sikkhampaccacikkhanasikkhapadam 捨學(等)

10. Ya pana bhikkhuni kupita anattamana evam vadeyya "Buddham paccacikkhami

拒絕 任何 比丘尼 不 高興 如是 說 佛陀 pana bhikkhuni kupita vadati Buddha paccacikkhati an+attamana f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.) adv. 3s.opt. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr.

十、若比丘尼憤怒不悦時,這樣說:「我捨佛,

10. Should any bhikkhuni, angry and displeased, say, "I repudiate the Buddha,

Dhammam paccacikkhami, Savgham paccacikkhami, sikkham paccacikkhami,

拒絕 法 拒絕 拒絕 學、紀律 Dhamma paccacikkhati sikkha paccacikkhati Savgha paccacikkhati m.s.Acc. 1s.pr. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr. f.s.Acc. 1s.pr.

我捨法,我捨僧,我捨學,

I repudiate the Dhamma, I repudiate the Savgha, I repudiate the Training.

¹ 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1032.1):「若比丘尼瞋恚不喜,於異分事中取片,非波羅夷比丘尼,以無根波羅夷 法謗,欲破彼人梵行。後於異時,若問、若不問,知是異分事中取片,彼比丘尼住瞋恚,故作如是說,是比丘 尼犯初法應捨僧伽婆鬥沙。」

Paci.IV,238(CS:pg.309):「不犯:非同學者,放棄者,癡狂者,最初之犯行者。」

kinnumava samaniyo ya samaniyo sakyadhitaro, santabbapi samaniyo

何以 不 僅 沙門尼 彼 沙門尼 釋迦女 其他 也 沙門尼 kim+nu+ma+eva samani ya samani sakyadhitaro santabba pi samani f.s.Acc. f.s.Acc. f.s.Acc. f.s.Acc. 1s.pr. f.s.Acc.

哪裡只有這沙門尼是釋迦沙門尼,也有其他

Since when were the Sakyan-daughter contemplatives the only contemplatives? There are other contemplatives who are

lajjiniyo kukkuccika sikkhakama, tasaham santike brahmacariyam carissami"ti.

有羞恥的 謹慎的 這 彼處 我 鄰近 欲 梵行 往、漫遊 lajjati kukkuccika sikkha+kama ta +sa+aham santike brahmacariva carati (car+a) ti adj.(m.s.Acc.) adj.(m.s.Acc.) adj.(m.s.Acc.) adv f.s.Acc. 1s fut

有羞恥的、謹慎的、有學(戒)欲的沙門尼,我將去那裡修梵行。

conscientious, scrupulous, and desirous of training. I will practice the holy life in their company,"

Sa bhikkhuni bhikkhunihi evamassa vacaniya "mayye kupita anattamana evam avaca

比丘尼 說、勸告 勿 大姐 生氣 這 比丘尼 如是 有 不 高興 如是 說 bhikkhuni bhikkhuni evam+atthi vuccati ma kupita an+attamana vadati f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. adv. 3s.opt. grd.(f.s.Nom.) f.s.Voc. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.) adv. 3s.opt.

這比丘尼勸告憤怒不悦時,這樣說:「大姐!不要憤怒不悦,這樣說:

the bhikkhunis are to admonish her thus: "Lady, don't — angry and displeased — say,

'Buddham paccacikkhami, dhammam paccacikkhami, savgham paccacikkhami,

佛陀 拒絕 法 拒絕 僧團 拒絕 Buddha paccacikkhati Dhamma paccacikkhati paccacikkhati Savgha m.s.Acc. 1s.pr. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr. 1s.pr. m.s.Acc.

「我捨佛,我捨法,我捨僧,我捨學,

'I repudiate the Buddha, I repudiate the Dhamma, I repudiate the Sangha, I repudiate the Training.

sikkham paccacikkhami, kinnumava samaniyo ya samaniyo sakyadhitaro,

沙門女(尼) 學、紀律 何以 不僅 沙門尼 彼 釋泇女(尼) sikkha paccacikkhati kim+nu+ma+eva samani samani sakvadhitaro va f.s.Acc. 1s.pr. f.p.Acc. f.p.Acc. f.p.Acc. adv. f.p.Acc.

哪裡只有這邊的釋迦沙門尼,

Since when were the Sakyan-daughter contemplatives the only contemplatives?

santabbapi samaniyo lajjiniyo kukkuccika sikkhakama,

有 其他 也 沙門尼 有羞恥的 謹慎的 學 欲 santa+abba+ pi samani lajjati kukkuccika sikkha+kama (m.n.p.Nom.) f.p.Acc. adj.(m.p.Acc.) adj.(m.p.Acc.) adj.(m.p.Acc.)

也有其他有羞恥的、謹慎的、欲學(戒)的沙門尼,

There are other contemplatives who are conscientious, scrupulous, and desirous of training.

tasahamsantike brahmacariyam carissami"ti.Abhiramayye,這 彼處 我鄰近梵行往、漫遊應歡喜大姐

ta +sa+aham santike brahmacariya carati (car+a) ti abhirama+ayye adv. f.s.Acc. 1s.fut. 2s.imp. f.s.Voc.

我將去那裡修梵行。」大姐!應該高興!

I will practice the holy life in their company.' Take delight, lady.

svakkhato dhammo, cara brahmacariyam samma dukkhassa antakiriyaya"ti,

已被說 行 梵行 正確地、徹底地 苦的 終止 su+akkhata dukkha antakiriya dhammo <carati brahmacariya ti samma pp.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Nom. 2s.imp. f.s.Acc. adj.(f.s.Gen.) f.s.Gen.

法已被善說,當修梵行!徹底地終止苦。

The Dhamma is well-expounded. Follow the holy life for the right ending of suffering."

Evabca bhikkhuni bhikkhunihi vuccamana tath'eva sa pagganheyya, 如此和 這 比丘尼 比丘尼 勸告 如此 仍 努力 pa + ganhati<(gah 拿+nha) evam +ca bhikkhuni bhikkhuni vuccati tatha + eva ta

adv.conj. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) adv. 3s.opt.

該比丘尼被諸比丘尼這樣勸告時,仍然那樣堅持,

And should that bhikkhuni, thus admonished by the bhikkhunis, persist as before,

sa bhikkhuni bhikkhunihi yavatatiyam samanubhasitabba tassa patinissaggaya.

比丘尼 這 比丘尼 它 直到 第三 勸告 放棄 bhikkhuni bhikkhuni yava + tatiyam samanubhasati patinissajjati ta f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. adv. grd.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Gen. m.s.Dat.

諸比丘尼應該乃至三次勸告該比丘尼放棄它。

the bhikkhunis are to rebuke her up to three times so as to desist.

Yavatatiyab'ce samanubhasiyamana tam patinissajjeyya, icc'etam kusalam. No ce patinissajjeyya,

直到 第三 如果 勸告 如是 那 不 如果 放棄 善 yava+tatiyam+ce samanubhasati patinissajjati iti+ eta kusala patinissajjati ta no ppr.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. n.s.Nom. n.s.Nom. adv. conj. m.s.Acc. conj. 3s.opt.

如果到了第三次被勸告時,(她)放棄它,那就好。如果不放棄,

If while being rebuked up to three times she desists, that is good. If she does not desist,

ayampi bhikkhuni yavatatiyakam dhammam apanna nissaraniyam savghadisesam

這也 比丘尼 直到 第三 法 犯 僧殘 逐出 ayam+pi bhikkhuni yava+tatiyaka dhamma apanna nissaraniya savghadisesa f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. pp.(f.s.Acc.) grd.(f.s.Acc.) adj.(f.s.Acc.)

直到第三次,那麼,該比丘尼犯應逐出的僧殘法。

then this bhikkhuni, also, as soon as she has fallen into the third act of offence, is to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community.

*11.Adhikaranakupitasikkhapadam 停止瞋恨

11.Ya pana bhikkhuni kismibcideva adhikarane paccakata kupita anattamana evam vadeyya

任何 比丘尼 某人,任何人 控告 已失望 生氣 不 高興 如是 說 ya pana bhikkhuni kismibci+d+eva adhikarana paccakata kupita an+attamana vadati f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom adv. f.s.Nom adv. f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.) adv. 3s.opt.

十一、「若比丘尼,被某尼控告而心情低落,憤怒不悦時,這樣說:

11. Should any bhikkhuni, overthrown in even a trifling issue, angry and displeased, say,

"chandagaminiyo ca bhikkhuniyo, dosagaminiyo ca bhikkhuniyo,

貪 引導者 和 比丘尼 瞋 引導者 和 比丘尼 chanda+gamina ca bhikkhuni dosa+gamina ca bhikkhuni m. f.p.Nom. conj. f.p.Nom. m. f.p.Nom. conj. f.p.Nom.

「那些比丘尼是被貪欲引導的、那些比丘尼是被瞋恨引導的、

"The bhikkhunis are biased through favoritism, biased through aversion,

mohagaminiyo ca bhikkhuniyo, bhayagaminiyo ca bhikkhuniyo"ti,

痴 引導者和比丘尼害怕引導者和比丘尼moha + gaminacabhikkhunibhaya+gaminacabhikkhunim.f.p.Nom.conj.f.p.Nom.n.f.p.Nom.conj.f.p.Nom.

那些比丘尼是被愚痴引導的、那些比丘尼是被恐懼引導的。」

biased through delusion, biased through fear,"

sa bhikkhuni bhikkhunihi evamassa vacaniya "mayye,

這 比丘尼 比丘尼 如此 勸告 勿 大姐 ta bhikkhuni bhikkhuni evam+assa vuccati ma f.p.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. grd.(f.s.Nom.) f.s.Voc.

這位比丘尼勸告該比丘尼說:「大姐!不要這樣說,

the bhikkhunis are to admonish her thus: "Lady, don't —

kismibcideva adhikarane paccakata kupita anattamana evam avaca

某人、任何人 控告 已失望 生氣 不 高興 如是 說 kismibci+d+eva adhikarana paccakata kupita vadati an+attamana adv. n.s.Loc. pp.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.) adv. 3s.aor.

被某尼控告而心情低落,憤怒不悦時,這樣說:

overthrown in even a trifling issue, angry and displeased — say,

'chandagaminiyo ca bhikkhuniyo, dosagaminiyo ca bhikkhuniyo,

欲 引導者 和 比丘尼 引導者 和 比丘尼 chanda+gaminiyo bhikkhuniyo bhikkhun**i** ca dosa+gamina ca f.p.Nom. f.p.Nom. f.p.Nom. conj. f.p.Nom. conj.

那些比丘尼是被貪欲引導的、那些比丘尼是被瞋恨引導的、

'The bhikkhunis are biased through favoritism, biased through aversion,

mohagaminiyo ca bhikkhuniyo, bhayagaminiyo ca bhikkhuniyo'ti,

引導者 和 比丘尼 害怕 比丘尼 bhikkhuni bhaya + gamina moha + gamina ca ca bhikkhuni f.p.Nom. conj. f.p.Nom. f.p.Nom. coni. f.p.Nom.

那些比丘尼是被愚痴引導的、那些比丘尼是被恐懼引導的。」

biased through delusion, biased through fear.

ayya kho chandapi gaccheyya, dosapi gaccheyya, mohapi gaccheyya, bhayapi gaccheyya"ti.

批 1九 癡 chanda api gacchati gacchati gacchati ti avva kho gacchati dosa api moha api bhaya api f.s.Nom. m.p.Nom. 3s.opt. m.p.Nom. 3s.opt. m.p.Nom. 3s.opt. m.p.Nom. 3s.opt.

大姐!妳可能是被貪欲所引導的、被瞋恨所引導的、被愚痴所引導的、被恐懼所 引導的。」

It may be that you, lady, are biased through favoritism, biased through aversion, biased through delusion, biased through fear."

Evabca bhikkhuni bhikkhun**i**hi tath'eva sa vuccamana pagganheyya, 如此和 這 比丘尼 比丘尼 勸告 仍 努力 如此 bhikkhuni bhikkhuni pa+ganhati evam +ca vuccati tatha + eva ta adv.coni. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) adv. 3s.opt.

該比丘尼被諸比丘尼這樣勸告時,仍然那樣堅持,

And should that bhikkhuni, thus admonished by the bhikkhunis, persist as before,

sa bhikkhuni bhikkhunihi yavatatiyam samanubhasitabba tassa patinissaggaya.

這 比丘尼 比丘尼 第三 它 直到 勸告 放棄 bhikkhuni bhikkhuni yava + tatiyam samanubhasati patinissajjati ta ta f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. adv. grd.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Gen. m.s.Dat.

這位比丘尼應該乃至三次勸告該比丘尼放棄它。

the bhikkhunis are to rebuke her up to three times so as to desist.

Yavatatiyab'ce samanubhasiyamana tam patinissajjeyya, icc'etam kusalam. No ce patinissajjeyya,

直到 第三 如果 它 如是 那 不 如果 勸告 放棄 yava+tatiyam + ce samanubhasati patinissajjati patinissajjati ta iti+ eta kusala no ce n.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. conj. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. n.s.Nom. adv. conj. 3s.opt.

如果到了第三次被勸告時,(她)放棄它,那就好。如果不放棄,

If while being rebuked up to three times she desists, that is good. If she does not desist,

ayampi bhikkhuni yavatatiyakam dhammam apanna nissaraniyam savghadisesam

這也 比丘尼 直到 第三 法 犯 僧殘 逐出 ayam+pi bhikkhuni yava+tatiyaka dhamma apanna nissaraniva savghadisesa f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. pp.(f.s.Acc.) grd.(f.s.Acc.) adj.(f.s.Acc.)

直到第三次,那麼,該比丘尼犯應逐出的僧殘法。

then this bhikkhuni, also, as soon as she has fallen into the third act of offence, is to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community.

*12.Papasamacarapathamasikkhapadam 惡行(1)

12.Bhikkhuniyo paneva samsattha viharanti papacara papasadda papasiloka

比丘尼 親近 住 惡 行 惡 名聲 惡 名望 bhikkhuni pana+ eva samsattha viharati papa+ cara papa + sadda papa + siloka f.p.Nom. pp.(m.s.Nom.) 3p.pr. m.p.Acc. m.p.Acc. m.p.Acc.

十二、住得親近¹的比丘尼,行惡行、得惡名聲、壞名望²,她們是

12. In case bhikkhunis are living entangled, depraved in their conduct, depraved in their reputation, depraved in their notoriety (depraved in their livelihood),

bhikkhunisavghassa vihesika abbamabbissa vajjappaticchadika,

```
比丘尼 僧團 惱亂 相互 罪 覆藏
bhikkhuni + savgha the sika abbamabbissa vajja+paticchadika
f. m.s.Gen. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom.
```

比丘尼僧團的惱亂者,相互掩過飾非者。

exasperating the Bhikkhuni Community, hiding one another's faults,

ta bhikkhuniyo bhikkhunihi evamassu vacaniya "bhaginiyo kho samsattha viharanti

```
諸比丘尼
                    比丘尼
                                      如是
                                                             姐妹
                                                                                   親近
                                                   說
                                                                                                   住
     bhikkhuni
                  bhikkhuni
                                  evam + assu
                                                  vuccati
                                                           bhagini
                                                                         kho
                                                                                 samsattha
                                                                                               viharati
ta
f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom.
                      f.p.Acc.
                                    adv. 1p.opt.
                                                grd.(f.s.Nom.) f.p.Nom.
                                                                               pp.(m.s.Nom.)
                                                                                                 3p.pr.
```

諸比丘尼應對此比丘尼這樣說:住得親近的姐妹,

the bhikkhunis are to admonish them thus: "The sisters are living entangled,

papacara papasadda papasiloka bhikkhunisavghassa vihesika

```
惡 行 惡 名聲 惡 名望 比丘尼 僧團 惱亂 papa+ cara papa + sadda papa + siloka bhikkhuni + savgha vihesika m.p.Acc. m.p.Acc. f. m.s.Gen. f.s.Nom.
```

作諸惡行、得諸惡名聲、壞名望,她們是比丘尼僧團的惱亂者,

depraved in their conduct, depraved in their reputation, depraved in their notoriety, exasperating the Bhikkhuni Community, hiding one another's faults.

abbamabbissa vajjappaticchadika, viviccathayye, vivekabbeva bhagininam savgho vanneti"ti,

```
離開
                                               大姐
                                                         遠離
                                                                其他
                                                                           姐妹
abbamabbissa
                 vajja+paticchadika
                                       <viviccati
                                                      viveka+abba+ eva
                                                                         bhagini
                                                                                  savgha
                                                                                           vanneti ti
f.s.Nom.
                                        2s.pr. f.s.Voc.
                                                                         f.s.Voc.
                          f.s.Nom.
                                                         m.
                                                               adj.
                                                                                  m.s.Nom.
```

互相掩過飾非。大姐!僧團評判妳離開,遠離其他的姐妹。」

Split up (your group), ladies. The Community recommends strict isolation for the sisters."

 $^{^1}$ Paci.IV,239(CS:pg.310):「住得親近:稱爲親近(samsattha(pp. of sam+srj發出)雜居),爲不適當的身體的和講話有關連的親近活動。」 S.22.3./III,11.:「居士!在此,有一類(出家)人與在家混雜居住,同喜,同愁,於樂中樂,於苦中苦,於生起作當作的事,自己陷入其中。」

² Paci.IV,239CS:pg.311): 「**壞名聲**:升起不好的名譽。**壞名望**:過著壞的邪命生活。_」

Evabca	ta bh	nikkhuniyo	bhikkhunihi	vuccamana	tath'eva	pagganheyyum,
如此 和	這	比丘尼	比丘尼	勸告	如此 仍	努力
evam +ca	ta	bhikkhuni	bhikkhuni	vuccati	tatha + eva	pa + ganhati
adv.conj.	f.s.Nom.	f.s.Nom.	f.p.Ins.	ppr.(f.s.Nom.)	adv.	3s.opt.

該比丘尼被諸比丘尼這樣勸告時,仍然那樣堅持,

And should those bhikkhunis, thus admonished by the bhikkhunis, persist as before,

ta bhikkhuniyo bhikkhunihi yavatatiyam samanubhasitabba tassa patinissaggaya.

這	比丘尼	比丘尼	直到第三	勸告	它	放棄
ta	bhikkhuni	bhikkhun i	yava + tatiya m	samanubhasati	ta	patinissajjati
f.s.Nom	. f.s.Nom.	f.p.Ins.	adv.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)	m.s.Gen.	m.s.Dat.

那些比丘尼應該乃至三次勸告該比丘尼放棄它。

the bhikkhunis are to rebuke them up to three times so as to desist.

Yavatatiyab'ce samanubhasiyamana tam patinissajjeyya, icc'etam kusalam. No ce patinissajjeyyum,

```
直到 第三 如果
                          勸告
                                                         如是 那
                                             放棄
yava+tatiyam + ce
                      samanubhasati ta
                                           patinissajjati
                                                          iti+ eta
                                                                            no ce
                                                                                       patinissajjati
                                                                    kusala
       adv. conj.
                     ppr.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc.
                                             3s.opt.
                                                           n.s.Nom. n.s.Nom. adv. conj.
                                                                                         3s.opt.
```

如果到了第三次被勸告時,(她)放棄它,那就好。如果不放棄,

If while being rebuked up to three times by the bhikkhunis they desist, that is good. If they do not desist,

imapi bhikkhuniyo yavatatiyakam dhammam apanna nissaraniyam savghadisesam.

```
這也
          比丘尼
                      直到 第三
                                         法
                                                     犯
                                                                逐出
                                                                                 僧殘
ayam+pi bhikkhuni
                     yava+tatiyaka
                                       dhamma
                                                    apanna
                                                              nissaraniva
                                                                              savghadisesa
f.p.Nom.
           f.p.Nom.
                         m.s.Acc.
                                        m.s.Acc.
                                                    pp.(f.s.Acc.)
                                                                 grd.(f.s.Acc.)
                                                                                 adj.(f.s.Acc.)
```

直到第三次,那麼,該比丘尼犯應逐出的僧殘法。1

then these bhikkhunis, also, as soon as they have fallen into the third act of offence, are to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community.

*13.Papasamacaradutiyasikkhapadam 惡行(2)

13.Ya pana bhikkhuni evam vadeyya "samsatthava, ayye, tumhe viharatha,

```
任何
           比丘尼
                         如是
                                  說
                                                          大姐
                                                                 妳們
                                              親近
           bhikkhuni
                                                                          viharatha
ya pana
                                 vadati
                                          samsattha+eva
                                                         ayye
                                                                 tumhe
f.s.Nom.adv. f.s.Nom.
                        adv.
                                3s.opt.
                                                        f.s.Voc.
                                                                2p.Nom.
                                                                           2p.pr.
```

十三、若比丘尼這樣說:「大姐!妳們住得親近,

13. Should any bhikkhuni say (to the bhikkhunis criticized in the preceding case), "Live entangled, ladies.

¹ 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1033.1):「若比丘尼相親近住,共作惡行,惡聲流布,展轉共相覆罪,是比丘尼當諫彼比丘尼言:大姊!汝等莫相親近,共作惡行,惡聲流布,共相覆罪,汝等若不相親近,於佛法中得增益安樂住。」是比丘尼諫彼比丘尼時,堅持不捨,是比丘尼應三諫,捨此事故,乃至三諫,捨者善,不捨者,是比丘尼犯三法應捨僧伽婆尸沙。」

ma tumhe nana viharittha, santi savghe abbapi bhikkhuniyo evacara

住 有 僧團 比丘尼 ma tumhe nana viharittha atthi savgha abba+pi bhikkhuni eva + cara 2p.Nom. m.s.Loc. 2s.pp. 3s.pr. f.p.Acc. m.p.Acc.

不要(當作)分開住,僧團中其他比丘尼也是同樣(行惡)行、

Don't live separately. There are other bhikkhunis in the Community with the same conduct, the same reputation, the same notoriety,

evamsadda evamsiloka bhikkhunisavghassa vihesika abbamabbissa vajjappaticchadika,

如此 比丘尼 惱亂 bhikkhuni + savgha abbamabbissa vajja+paticchadika evam+ sadda evam+ siloka vihesika m.p.Acc. m.p.Acc. f. m.s.Gen. f.s.Acc. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom.

得同樣(惡)名聲、同樣(壞)名望,爲比丘尼僧團之惱亂者、相互掩過飾非,

exasperating the Bhikkhuni Community, hiding one another's faults,

ta savgho na kibci aha tumhabbeva savgho ubbaya paribhavena

彼 僧團 不 任何 說 妳們 其他 僧團 鄙視 輕視 ta savgha na kibci aha tvam+abba+eva savgha ubba paribhava f.s.Acc. m.s.Nom. adv. 2s. m.s.Nom. f.s.Ins. m.s.Ins.

僧團卻不對她們說怎樣,那是由於僧團懦弱,而鄙視、輕視、

but the Community doesn't say anything to them. It's simply because of your weakness (lack of partisans) that the Community — with contempt, scorn,

akkhantiya vebhassiya dubbalya evamaha- 'bhaginiyo kho samsattha viharanti papacara

無忍耐、難堪 流言 姐妹 無力 如是 說 親近 akkhanti vebhassi dubbalya evam + bhagini samsattha viharati aha papa+ cara f.s.Nom. f.s.Ins. n.s.Ins. f.p.Nom. 2p.pr. m.p.Acc. pp.

難堪、流言,才這麼(對我們)說:『諸大姐住得親近,行惡行、

intolerance, and threats — says, 'The sisters are living entangled, depraved in their conduct,

papasadda papasiloka bhikkhunisavghassa vihesika abbamabbissa vajjappaticchadika,

名望 比丘尼 僧團 ||後ろ 相互. vajja+paticchadika papa + sadda papa + siloka bhikkhuni + savgha vihesika abbamabbissa m.p.Acc. m.p.Acc. f. m.s.Gen. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. n

得壞名聲、壞名望,是比丘尼僧團的惱亂者,互相掩過飾非。

depraved in their reputation, depraved in their notoriety.

viviccathayye, vivekabbeva bhagininam savgho vanneti"ti,

離開 大姐 遠離 姐妹 僧團 其他 評論 viveka+abba+ eva bhagini vanneti ti viviccati ayye savgha f.s.Voc. m. adj. f.p.Gen. m.s.Nom. 3s.pr. 2s.pr.

大姐!僧團評判妳離開,遠離其他的姐妹。』」

Split up (your group), ladies. The Community recommends strict isolation for the sisters,""

sa bhikkhuni bhikkhunihi evamassa vacaniya "mayye, evam avaca,

這 比丘尼 比丘尼 如此 是 勸告 不要 大姐 如此 說 ta bhikkhuni bhikkhuni +hi evam +< atthi vatti ma evam vatti f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. adv. 3s.opt. grd.(f.s.Nom.) adv. f.s.Voc. adv. 3s.aor.

該比丘尼應該被諸比丘尼這樣勸告:「大姐!不要那樣說:

the bhikkhunis are to admonish her thus: "Lady, don't say,

samsatthava ayye tumhe viharatha, ma tumhe nana viharittha,

親近 大姐 妳們 住 勿 你們 種種 住 samsattha+eva ayye tumhe viharatha pp.(f.p.Nom.) f.s.Voc.2p. 2p.pr. adv. 2s.p. adv. 2s.pp.

『大姐!妳們住得親近,妳們不要(當作)分開住。

'Live entangled, ladies. Don't live separately.

santi savghe abbapi bhikkhuniyo evacara evamsadda evamsiloka

有 僧團 其他 比丘尼 行 如此 聲 如此 名望 atthi savgha abba+pi bhikkhuni eva+ cara evam + sadda evam + siloka 3s.pr. m.s.Loc. f.s.Acc. m.p.Acc. m.p.Acc. m.p.Acc. m.p.Acc.

僧團有其他比丘尼也是同樣(行惡)行、得同樣(壞)名聲、同樣(壞)名望,

There are other bhikkhunis in the Community with the same conduct, the same reputation, the same notoriety,

bhikkhunisavghassa vihesika abbamabbissa vajjappaticchadika, ta savgho na kibci aha,

僧團 比丘尼 (答) 相石. 覆藏 彼 僧團 任何 vihesika vajja+paticchadika bhikkhuni + savgha abbamabbissa ta savgha na kibci aha f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m.s.Gen. fs Nom n f.s.Acc. m.s.Nom. adv.

是比丘尼僧團的惱亂者,互相掩過飾非;僧團卻不對她說怎樣,

exasperating the Bhikkhuni Community, hiding one another's faults, but the Community doesn't say anything to them.

tumhabbeva savgho ubbaya paribhavena akkhantiya vebhassiya dubbalya evamaha-

妳們 其他 輕視 難堪 流言 無力 ubba tvam+abba+eva savgha paribhaya akkhanti vebhassi dubbalya evam + aha m.s.Nom. f.s.Ins. m s Ins f s Nom f s Ins n.s.Ins adv.

那是由於僧團懦弱,而鄙視、輕視、難堪、流言,才這麼(對我們)說:

It's simply because of your weakness that the Community — with contempt, scorn, intolerance, and threats — says,

'bhaginiyo kho samsattha viharanti papacara papasadda papasiloka

姐妹 親沂 惡 行 名聲 名望 住 papa + sadda bhagini samsattha papa+cara papa + siloka viharati f.p.Nom. m.p.Acc. pp.(m.s.Nom.) m.p.Acc. m.p.Acc.

大姐!妳們住得親近,這樣行惡行、得壞名聲、壞名望

"The sisters are living entangled, depraved in their conduct,

bhikkhunisavghassa vihesika abbamabbissa vajjappaticchadika,

比丘尼 僧團 惱亂 相互 罪 覆藏 bhikkhuni + savgha vihesika abbamabbissa vajja+paticchadika f. m.s.Gen. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. n. f.s.Nom.

是比丘尼僧團的惱亂者,互相掩過飾非。

depraved in their reputation, depraved in their notoriety.

viviccathayye, vivekabbeva bhagininam savgho vanneti"ti,

離開 大姐 遠離 其他 姐妹 僧團 評論 viviccati ayye viveka+abba+ eva bhagini savgha vanneti ti 2s.pr. f.s.Voc. m. adj. f.p.Gen. m.s.Nom. 3s.pr.

大姐!僧團評判妳離開,遠離其他的姐妹。』」

Split up (your group), ladies. The Community recommends strict isolation for the sisters."

bhikkhuni bhikkhun**i**hi Evabca vuccamana tath'eva pagganheyya, sa 如此 和 這 比丘尼 比丘尼 勸告 如此 仍 努力 pa+ganhati bhikkhuni bhikkhuni evam +ca ta vuccati tatha + eva f.p.Ins. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) 3s.opt. adv.conj. adv.

該比丘尼被諸比丘尼這樣勸告時,仍然那樣堅持,

And should that bhikkhuni, thus admonished by the bhikkhunis, persist as before,

sa bhikkhuni bhikkhunihi yavatatiyam samanubhasitabba tassa patinissaggaya.

這 比丘尼 比丘尼 第三 勸告 它 放棄 直到 bhikkhuni bhikkhuni yava + tatiyam samanubhasati patinissajjati ta ta f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. adv. grd.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Gen. m.s.Dat.

諸比丘尼應該乃至三次勸告該比丘尼放棄它。

the bhikkhunis are to rebuke her up to three times so as to desist.

Yavatatiyab'ce samanubhasiyamana tam patinissajjeyya, icc'etam kusalam. No ce patinissajjeyya,

不 如果 直到 第三 如果 如是 那 它 放棄 yava+tatiyam+ce samanubhasati ta patinissajjati iti+ eta kusala no ce patinissajjati adv. conj. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. n.s.Nom. 3s.opt. n.s.Nom. adv. conj. 3s.opt.

如果到了第三次被勸告時,(她)放棄它,那就好。如果不放棄,

If while being rebuked up to three times she desists, that is good. If she does not desist,

ayampi bhikkhuni yavatatiyakam dhammam apanna nissaraniyam savghadisesam

這也 直到 比丘尼 第三 法 犯 逐出 僧殘 avam+pi bhikkhuni vava+tativaka dhamma apanna nissaraniva savghadisesa f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. adv. m.s.Acc. grd.(f.s.Acc.) adj.(f.s.Acc.) pp.(f.s.Acc.)

直到第三次,那麼,該比丘尼犯應逐出的僧殘法。

1

¹《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1033.1):「若比丘尼僧爲作呵諫時,餘比丘尼教作如是言:『汝等莫別住當共住,我亦見餘比丘尼,不別住共作惡行,惡聲流布共相覆罪,僧以恚故教汝別住。』是比丘尼應諫彼比丘尼言:『大姊!汝莫教餘比丘尼言:汝等莫別住,我亦見餘比丘尼,共住共作惡行,惡聲流布共相覆罪,僧以恚故教汝別住,今正有此二比丘尼,共住共作惡行惡聲流布,共相覆罪更無有餘,若此比丘尼別住,於佛法中有增益安樂住。』是比丘尼諫彼比丘尼時,堅持不捨,是比丘尼應三諫,令捨此事故,乃至三諫捨者善,不捨者,是比丘尼,犯三法應捨僧伽婆尸沙。」

then this bhikkhuni, also, as soon as she has fallen into the third act of offence, is to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community.

- 14.Savghabhedakasikkhapadam 分裂僧團(=Bhikkhu Savghadiseso 10)
- 14. Ya pana bhikkhuni samaggassa savghassa bhedaya parakkameyya bhedanasamvattanikam

任何 比丘尼 和諧 致力 破壞 ya pana bhikkhuni samagga savgha bheda para-kamati bhedana+samvattanika f.s.Nom.adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Gen. m.s.Gen. m.s.Dat. 3s.opt. m.s.Acc.

十四、若比丘尼致力於破壞和合的僧團,

14. Should any bhikkhuni agitate for a schism in a united Community,

va adhikaranam samadaya paggayha tittheyya,

或 案件 採取 努力 安住 va adhikarana samadiyati pa+ganhati titthati conj. n.s.Acc. ger. ger. 3s.opt.

或者是採取導致破壞的案件,並且持續推動。

or should she persist in taking up an issue conducive to schism,

sa bhikkhuni bhikkhnihi evam assa vacaniya

這 比丘尼 比丘尼 如此 是 勸告 bhikkhuni atthi bhikkhuni vacaniya ta evam f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. 3s.opt. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

這位比丘尼應該被諸比丘如此勸告:

the bhikkhunis are to admonish her thus:

"Mayya, samaggassa savghassa bhedaya parakkami bhedanasamvattanikam va不要 大姐 和諧 僧團 破壞 致力 破壞 導致 或

ma samagga savgha bheda para+kamati bhedana+samvattanika va adv. f.s.Voc. m.s.Gen. m.s.Dat. 3s.aor. n. m.s.Acc. conj.

adhikaranam samadaya paggayha atthasi. sametayya, savghena,

事件 採取 努力 安住 和合 大姐 僧團 adhi+karana samadiyati pa+ganhati titthati sameti savgha n.s.Acc. ger. ger. 3s.aor. 3s.imp. f.s.Nom. m.s.Ins.

「讓大姐不要致力於破壞和合的僧團,也不要採取導致破壞的案件而持續推動」。請大姐與僧團和合,

"Do not, lady, agitate for a schism in a united Community or persist in taking up an issue conducive to schism. Let the lady be reconciled with the Community,

samaggo hi savgho sammodamano avivadamano ekuddeso phasu viharati"ti.

和諧 因爲 僧團 歡喜 無 諍 一 誦 安樂 生活 samagga hi savgha sammodati a+vivadati eka+uddesa phasu viharati+iti m.s.Nom. adv. m.s.Nom. ppr.(m.s.Nom.) ppr.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. 3s.pr. ind.

因爲和合的僧團歡喜無諍地一起誦(戒),就生活安樂」。

for a united Community, on courteous terms, without dispute, with a common recitation, dwells in peace."

bhikkhuni bhikkhunihi pagganheyya, Evabca vuccamana tath'eva sa 如此 和 這 比丘尼 比丘尼 勸告 如此 仍 努力 bhikkhuni bhikkhuni pa+ganhati evam +ca vuccati tatha + eva ta f.s.Nom. adv.conj. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) adv. 3s.opt.

該比丘尼被諸比丘尼這樣勸告時,仍然那樣堅持,

sa bhikkhuni bhikkhunihi yavatatiyam samanubhasitabba tassa patinissaggaya.

比丘尼 這 比丘尼 直到 第三 勸告 它 放棄 bhikkhuni bhikkhuni samanubhasati patinissajjati yava + tatiyam ta ta f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. adv. grd.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Gen. m.s.Dat.

諸比丘尼應該乃至三次勸告該比丘尼放棄它。

And should that bhikkhuni, thus admonished by the bhikkhunis, persist as before, the bhikkhunis are to rebuke her up to three times so as to desist.

Yavatatiyab'ce samanubhasiyamana tam patinissajjeyya, icc'etam kusalam. No ce patinissajjeyya, 如果 直到 第三 如果 勸告 如是 那 它 放棄 善 patinissajjati yava+tatiyam + ce samanubhasati patinissajjati iti+ eta kusala ta no adv. conj. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. n.s.Nom. n.s.Nom. adv. conj.

如果到了第三次被勸告時,(她)放棄它,那就好。如果不放棄,

If while being rebuked up to three times she desists, that is good. If she does not desist,

ayampi bhikkhuni yavatatiyakam dhammam apanna nissaraniyam savghadisesam

這也 第三 僧殘 比丘尼 直到 法 犯 逐出 ayam+pi bhikkhuni yava+tatiyaka dhamma apanna nissaraniva savghadisesa f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. adv. m.s.Acc. pp.(f.s.Acc.) grd.(f.s.Acc.) adj.(f.s.Acc.)

直到第三次,那麼,該比丘尼犯應逐出的僧殘法。

then this bhikkhuni, also, as soon as she has fallen into the third act of offence, is to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community.

- 15.Bhedanuvattakasikkhapadam 與分裂僧團的比丘同黨(=Bhikkhu Savghadiseso11)
- 15. Tass'eva kho pana bhikkhuniya bhikkhuniyo honti anuvattaka vaggavadaka, eko va 她 強調詞 又 比丘尼 比丘尼 是 追隨 別眾 說 或 tassa+ eva kho pana bhikkhu bhikkhu < hu anuvattati vagga+vadaka eka va f.s.Gen. ind. adv. f.s.Gen. f.p.Nom. 3p.pr. m.p.Nom. f.p.Nom. m.s.Nom. conj.

十五、若比丘尼有一個、兩個、或三個比丘尼追隨者,站在她那邊講話,

15. Should bhikkhunis — one, two, or three — who are followers and partisans of that bhikkhuni,

dve va tayo va, te evam vadeyyum, "Mayyayo, etam bhikkhunim kibci avacuttha, 或 妣 如此 說 不要 大姐 這個 比丘尼 任何 說 vadati kim+ci va va ta evam ma avasmant eta bhikkhuni vatti m.p.Nom. conj. f.p.Nom.adv. adv. f.p.Nom. n.s.Acc.ind. 2p.aor. 3p.opt. f.s.Acc. f.s.Acc.

如果她們這樣說:「諸大姐!不要說這位比丘尼的任何事情。

say, "Do not, ladies, admonish that bhikkhuni in any way.

dhammavadi c'esa bhikkhuni, vinayavadi c'esa bhikkhuni, amhakabc'esa bhikkhuni 法 主張 和這個 比丘尼 律 主張 和這個 比丘尼 我 和這個 比丘尼 dhamma+vadin ca+esa bhikkhuni vinaya+vadin ca+esa bhikkhuni amhakam+ca+ esa bhikkhuni m.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom.

這位比丘尼是講法的人,這位比丘尼是講戒律的人,而且這位比丘尼

She is an exponent of the Dhamma, she is an exponent of the Vinaya. She acts

chandabca rucibca adaya voharati, janati no bhasati, amhakamp'etam khamati"ti. 知道 適合 khamati + iti chanda +ca ruci + ca adati voharati janati aham bhastai amhakam + pi + eta m.p.Gen. ind. m.s.Nom. m.s.Acc.conj. m.s.Acc.conj. ger. 3s.pr. 3s.pr. m.p.Gen. 3s.pr. 3s.pr. ind. 選取我們的需求和喜好來說,知道我們(的需要)而說,那是適合我們的。」 with our consent and approval. She knows, she speaks for us, and that is pleasing to us,"

bhikkhuniyo bhikkhunihi evam assu vacaniya, "Mayyayo, evam avacuttha. ta 這 是 大姐 比丘尼 比丘尼 如此 勸告 不要 如此 說 bhikkhuni bhikkhuni evam atthi vacaniya evam vatti f.p.Nom. f.p.Nom. f.p.Ins. adv. 3p.opt. grd.(f.p.Nom.) adv. f.p.Nom. adv. 2p.aor.

該比丘尼應該被諸比丘尼這樣勸告:「讓諸大姐不要那樣說,

the bhikkhunis are to admonish them thus: "Do not say that, ladies.

Na bhikkhuni dhammavadi, na c'esa c'esa bhikkhuni vinayavadi. 不 和這 比丘尼 法 主張 不 和這 比丘尼 vinaya+vadin na ca+ esa bhikkhuni dhamma+vadin ca + esa bhikkhuni na f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. adv. m. m.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m. m.s.Nom.

這位比丘尼不是講法的人,這位比丘尼不是講律的人。

That bhikkhuni is not an exponent of the Dhamma and she is not an exponent of the Vinaya.

savghena, Mayyanam'pi savghabhedo ruccittha, samet'ayyanam 不要 大姐 僧團 也 破壞 贊成 和合 ma api savgha+ bheda ruccati sameti savgha adv. f.p.Gen. ind. f.p.Gen. m.s.Nom. 2p.aor. 3s.imp. m.s.Ins.

諸大姐不要贊成破壞僧團。請諸大姐與僧團和合,

Do not, ladies, approve of a schism in the Community.

savgho sammodamano avivadamano viharati"ti. samaggo hi ekuddeso phasu 生活 和諧 因爲 喜悅 誦 samagga hi a+vivadati eka+uddesa phasu viharati+iti savgha sammodati m.s.Nom. conj. m.s.Nom. ppr.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Nom. ppr.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Nom. 3s.pr. ind.

因爲和合的僧團歡喜、無諍地一起誦戒,就生活安樂」。」

Let the ladies' (minds) be reconciled with the Community, for a united Community, on courteous terms, without dispute, with a common recitation, dwells in peace."

Evabca	ta bh	ikkhuniyo	bhikkhun i hi	vuccamana	tath'eva	pagganheyyum,
如此 和	這	比丘尼	比丘尼	勸告	如此 仍	努力
evam +ca	ta	bhikkhuni	bhikkhun i	vuccati	tatha + eva	pa+ganhati
adv.conj.	f.s.Nom.	f.s.Nom.	f.p.Ins.	ppr.(f.s.Nom.)	adv.	3s.opt.

該比丘尼被諸比丘尼這樣勸告時,仍然那樣堅持,

And should those bhikkhunis, thus admonished by the bhikkhunis, persist as before,

ta bhikkhuniyo bhikkhunihi yavatatiyam samanubhasitabba tassa patinissaggaya.

這	比丘尼	比丘尼	直到第三	勸告	它	放棄
ta	bhikkhun i	bhikkhuni	yava + tatiyam	samanubhasati	ta	patinissajjati
f.s.Nom	. f.s.Nom.	f.p.Ins.	adv.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)	m.s.Gen.	m.s.Dat.

諸比丘尼應該乃至三次勸告該比丘尼放棄它。

the bhikkhunis are to rebuke them up to three times so as to desist.

Yavatatiyab'ce samanubhasiyamana tam patinissajjeyyum. Icc'etam kusalam. No ce patinissajjeyyum,

```
直到 第三 如果 勸告 它 放棄 如是 那 善 不 如果 放棄 yava+tatiyam + ce samanubhasati ta patinissajjati m.s.Acc. conj. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. 如是 那 善 不 如果 放棄 iti+ eta kusala no ce patinissajjati n.s.Nom. adv. conj. 3s.opt.
```

如果到了第三次被勸告時,(她)放棄它,那就好。如果不放棄,

If while being rebuked up to three times by the bhikkhunis they desist, that is good. If they do not desist,

imapi bhikkhuniyo yavatatiyakam dhammam apanna nissaraniyam savghadisesam.

```
僧殘
這也
          比丘尼
                      直到
                                          法
                                                      犯
                                                                 逐出
                                        dhamma
                                                                                 savghadisesa
ayam+pi
         bhikkhuni
                     yava+tatiyaka
                                                                nissaraniya
                                                     apanna
f.p.Nom.
          f.p.Nom.
                       m.s.Acc.
                                      m.s.Acc.
                                                  pp.(f.s.Acc.)
                                                                grd.(f.s.Acc.)
                                                                                adj.(f.s.Acc.)
```

直到第三次,那麼,該比丘尼犯應逐出的僧殘法。

then these bhikkhunis, also, as soon as they have fallen into the third act of offence, are to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community.

16.Dubbacasikkhapadam 惡名望(=Bhikkhu Savghadiseso 12)

16.Bhikkhu pan'eva dubbacajatika hoti, uddesapariyapannesu sikkhapadesu bhikkhunihi

```
比丘 連接詞 強調詞
                        難 勸告 特性 有
                                             誦出
                                                      包含
                                                                      學處
                                                                                   比丘尼
bhikkhu
         pana+eva
                    du+vaca+jatika
                                    < hu
                                           uddesa+pariyapajjati
                                                                   sikkhapada
                                                                                   bhikkhunu
                        adj.(f.s.Nom.) 3s.pr.
m.s.Nom.
             ind.
                                                    pp.(m.p.Loc.)
                                                                      n.p.Loc.
                                                                                     f.p.Ins.
```

十六、有個性不聽話的比丘尼,在包含於誦出的學處內被諸比丘尼依法勸告,

16. In case a bhikkhuni is by nature difficult to admonish — who, when being legitimately admonished by the bhikkhunis with reference to the training rules included in the (Patimokkha) recitation,

sahadhammikam vuccamana attanam avacaniyam karoti, "ma mam ayyayo kibci

伴隨 勸告 勸告 自己 任何 造成 saha+dhammaika vatti attan a+ vatti karoti aham kim+ ci ppr.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. grd.(m.s.Acc.) 3s.pr. adv. m.s.Acc. f.p.Nom. n.s.Acc. ind.

她使得自己難以被勸告,(說):「諸大姐!不要勸我任何

makes herself unadmonishable, (saying,) "Do not, ladies, say anything to me,

avacuttha kalyanam va papakam va, ahampayyayo, na kibci vakkhami kalyanam

不 忠告 好的 也 不 任何 勸告 好的 壞的 kalaya kalava a+vatti papaka va aham+ api na kim+ci vatti n.s.Acc. conj. m.s.Nom.ind. f.p.Acc. 2p.aor. n.s.Acc. conj. adv. n.s.Acc. 1s.fut. n.s.Acc.

好的或是壞的,我也不會去勸告諸大姐任何好的或是壞的,

good or bad; and I won't say anything to the ladies, good or bad.

va papakam va, viramathayyayo, mama vacanaya"ti.

或 壞的 或 大姐 我 勸告 papaka viramatha vacanaya + iti va aham n.s.Acc. 2p.imp. f.p.Nom. m.s.Gen. m.s.Dat. ind. coni. conj.

請諸大姐免勸告我!」

Refrain, ladies, from admonishing me" —

Sa bhikkhuni bhikkhunihi evam'assa vacaniya,

這 比丘尼 比丘尼 這樣 是 勸sa bhikkhunu bhikkhuni evam atthi vacaniya f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. adv. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

該比丘尼應該被諸比丘尼這樣勸告:

the bhikkhunis are to admonish her thus:

"Mayya, attanam avacaniyam akasi, vacaniyameva, ayya, attanam karotu,

不要 大姐 自己 勸告 浩成 勸告 強調詞 自己 造成 不 大姐 a + vatti karoti karoti attan vacaniya attan adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. grd.(m.s.Acc.) 3s.aor. grd.(m.s.Acc.) adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc.

大姐不要使得自己難以被勸告,請大姐使得自己可被勸告。

"Let the lady not make herself unadmonishable. Let the lady make herself admonishable.

ayyapi bhikkhuniyo vadatu sahadhammena, bhikkhuniyopi ayyam vakkhanti

大姐 也 比丘尼 佴 比丘尼 勸告 勸告 大姐 bhikkhuni vadati saha+ dhamma bhikkhuni +api vadati api f.s.Nom. ind. f.p.Acc. 3s.imp. ind. m s Ins f.p.Nom. ind. f.s.Acc. 3p.fut.

請大姐也依法勸告諸比丘尼,諸比丘尼也會依法勸告大姐,

Let the lady admonish the bhikkhunis in accordance with what is right, and the bhikkhunis will admonish the lady in accordance with what is right;

sahadhammena, evam samvaddha hi tassa Bhagavato parisa

因為 如此 成長 這個 世尊 saha+ dhamma <samvaddhati Bhagavant evam hi ta parisa pp.(f.p.Nom.) conj. prep. m.s.Ins. adv. m.s.Gen. m.s.Gen. f.s.Nom.

因爲世尊的徒眾就那樣成長,

for it is thus that the Blessed One's following is nurtured:

yad'idam abbamabbavacanena abbamabbavutthapanena"ti.

那 如此 互相 勸告 互相 導正錯誤
ya ima abbam+abba+ vacana abbam+abba+vutthapanena< vutthapeti + iti
m.s.Nom. m.s.Ins. ind.

那也靠互相勸告、互相導正錯誤。

through mutual admonition, through mutual rehabilitation."

bhikkhun**i**hi Evabca bhikkhuni vuccamana tath'eva pagganheyya, sa 如此和 比丘尼 勸告 如此 這 比丘尼 仍 努力 evam +ca bhikkhuni bhikkhuni tatha + eva pa+ganhati ta vuccati f.s.Nom. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) adv.conj. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. adv. 3s.opt.

該比丘尼被諸比丘尼這樣勸告時,仍然那樣堅持,

And should that bhikkhuni, thus admonished by the bhikkhunis, persist as before,

sa bhikkhuni bhikkhunihi yavatatiyam samanubhasitabba tassa patinissaggaya.

這 比丘尼 比丘尼 放棄 直到 它 bhikkhuni bhikkhuni yava + tatiyam samanubhasati patinissajjati f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Gen. m.s.Dat. f.p.Ins.

諸比丘尼應該乃至三次勸告該比丘尼放棄它。

the bhikkhunis are to rebuke her up to three times so as to desist.

Yavatatiyab'ce samanubhasiyamana tam patinissajjeyya, icc'etam kusalam. No ce patinissajjeyya,

直到 第三 如果 不 如果 勸告 它 放棄 如是 那 莾 放棄 samanubhasati iti+ eta yava+tatiyam + ce no ce patinissajjati ta patinissajjati kusala adv. conj. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. n.s.Nom. n.s.Nom. adv. conj. 3s.opt.

如果到了第三次被勸告時,(她)放棄它,那就好。如果不放棄,

If while being rebuked up to three times she desists, that is good. If she does not desist,

ayampi bhikkhuni yavatatiyakam dhammam apanna nissaraniyam savghadisesam

這也 比丘尼 直到 第三 法 逐出 僧殘 savghadisesa ayam+pi bhikkhuni yava+tatiyaka dhamma apanna nissaraniya f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. pp.(f.s.Acc.) grd.(f.s.Acc.) adj.(f.s.Acc.)

直到第三次,那麼,該比丘尼犯應逐出的僧殘法。

then this bhikkhuni, also, as soon as she has fallen into the third act of offence, is to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community.

- 17.Kuladusakasikkhapadam 惡行敗壞在家人(=Bhikkhu Savghadiseso 17)
 - 17.Bhikkhuni pan'eva abbataram gamam va nigamam va upanissaya viharati 比丘尼 連接詞 強調詞 某一 村落 或 城鎮 或 依靠 生活 pana+eva bhikkhuni abbatara gama va nigama va upanissayati viharati kula+dusaka f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. conj. m.s.Acc. conj. ger. 3s.pr. n. adj.(f.s.Nom.)
 - 十七、比丘尼依靠某一個村落或城鎮而生活,(她)是好家庭的破壞者、
 - 17. In case a bhikkhuni living in dependence on a certain village or town is a corrupter of families, a woman of depraved conduct —
- papasamacara, tassa kho papaka samacara dissanti c'eva suyyanti ca, kulani ca taya 妣 既 壞 行爲 而 壞 行爲 聽 良家 papa+samacara dassati ca+eva kula ta kho papaka samacara sunati ca adj. m.s.Nom. f.s.Gen. adv. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. pass.3p.pr. adv. pass.3p.pr. conj. n.p.Nom. conj. f.s.Ins. 行爲不好。而她的壞行爲既被看見又被聽見,

whose depraved conduct is both seen and heard about,

dutthani dissanti c'eva suyyanti ca. sa bhikkhuni bhikkhunihi evamassa vacaniya, 破壞 看見 既 聽 又 比丘尼 比丘尼 如此 這 是 勸告 dussati dassati ca + eva bhikkhuni bhikkhuni evam atthi sunati ca ta pp.(m.p.Nom.) pass.3p.pr. adv. pass.3p.pr. conj. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. adv. 3s.opt. grd.(f.s.Nom.) 且她所破壞的好家庭既被看見又被聽見。該比丘尼應該這樣被諸比丘尼勸告:

and the families she has corrupted are both seen and heard about — the bhikkhunis are to admonish her thus:

"ayya, kho kuladusika papasamacara, ayyaya dissanti kho papaka samacara 良家 破壞者 壞 實行 大姐 而 壞 行爲 見 kho kula+dusaka papa+samacara kho papaka samacara dassati f.s.Nom. adv. n. m.s.Nom. adi. m.s.Nom. f.s.Gen. adv. adj.(m.p.Nom.) m.p.Nom. pass.3p.pr.

大姐是好家庭的破壞者、行爲不好。

"You, lady, are a corrupter of families, a woman of depraved conduct.

cayyaya, dutthani c'eva suyyanti ca, kulani dissanti c'eva suyyanti ca. 良家 大姐 破壞 看見 蘴 又 又 kula dussati dassati ca+ eva ca+ eva sunati ca ca sunati ca conj. adv. pass.3p.pr. conj. n.p.Nom. f.s.Ins. pp.(n.p.Nom.) pass.3p.pr. adv. pass.3p.pr. conj.

而大姐的壞行爲既被看見又被聽見,且大姐所破壞的好家庭既被看見又被聽見。

Your depraved conduct is both seen and heard about, and the families you have corrupted are both seen and heard about.

idha vasena" ti. Pakkamat'ayya imamha avasa, alam te 離開 大姐 這 地方 足夠 她們(=妳) 這 pakkamati ima avasa alam tvam idha vasena< vasa + iti m.s.Abl. 3s.imp. f.s.Nom. m.s.Abl. adv. 2p.Nom. adv. m.s.Ins. ind.

請大姐離開這個地方,妳在這裡住夠了。

Leave this monastery, lady. Enough of your staying here."

Evabca sa bhikkhuni bhikkhunihi vuccamana ta bhikkhuniyo evam vadeyya,

如此 和 比丘尼 比丘尼 勸告 這 這 比丘尼 如此 說 evam + ca bhikkhuni bhikkhuni vatti bhikkhuni vadati ta ta evam ppr.(f.s.Nom.) f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. f.p.Acc. f.p.Acc. 3s.opt. adv. conj. adv.

當該比丘尼被諸比丘尼那樣勸告時,她這樣地告訴諸比丘尼:

And should that bhikkhuni, thus admonished by the bhikkhunis, say about the bhikkhunis,

"chandagaminiyo ca bhikkhuniyo, dosagaminiyo ca bhikkhuniyo, mohagaminiyo ca bhikkhuniyo,

引導者 比丘尼 引導者 和 比丘尼 引導者 比丘尼 和 chanda+gamina bhikkhuni dosa+gamina bhikkhuni ca bhikkhuni ca moha + gamina conj. conj. f.p.Nom. f.p.Nom. conj. f.p.Nom. m. f.p.Nom. f.p.Nom. f.p.Nom.

「諸比丘尼是被貪欲引導的、被瞋恨引導的、被愚痴引導的、

"The bhikkhunis are biased through favoritism, biased through aversion, biased through delusion,

bhayagaminiyo ca bhikkhuniyo, tadisikaya apattiya ekaccam pabbajenti,

引導者 和 比丘尼 像如此的 犯戒 某些人 擯出 bhaya+gamina ca bhikkhuni tadisika apatti ekacca pabbajeti f.p.Nom. conj. f.p.Nom. m.s.Ins. f.s.Ins. m.s.Acc. caus.3p.pr.

ekaccam na pabbajenti"ti.

某些人 不 擯出 ekacca na pabbajeti+ iti m.s.Acc. adv. caus.3p.pr. ind.

且被害怕引導的。因爲犯了像這樣的戒,趕走某些人,不趕走某些人」。

biased through fear, in that for this sort of offense they banish some and do not banish others,"

Sa bhikkhuni bhikkhuni hi evam assa vacaniya, "Mayya evam avaca,

這 比丘尼 比丘尼 如此 是 勸告 不要 大姐 如此 說 ta bhikkhuni bhikkhuni evam atthi vatti evam vatti ma f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. adv. 3s.opt. grd.(f.s.Nom.) adv. f.s.Nom. adv. 3s.aor.

該比丘尼應該被諸比丘尼這樣勸告:「大姐不要那樣說,

the bhikkhunis are to admonish her thus: "Do not say that, lady.

na ca bhikkhuniyo chandagaminiyo, na ca bhikkhuniyo dosagaminiyo

不 和 引導者 不 和 矑 引導者 比丘尼 貪 比丘尼 bhikkhuni chanda+gamina bhikkhuni dosa+ gamina na ca na ca f.p.Nom. adv. f.p.Nom. adv. conj. f.p.Nom. f.p.Nom. conj. m. m.

諸比丘尼不是被貪欲引導的、不是被瞋恨引導的、

The bhikkhunis are not biased through favoritism, are not biased through aversion,

na ca bhikkhuniyo mohagaminiyo, na ca bhikkhuniyo bhayagaminiyo.

不和 比丘尼 痴 引導者 不和 比丘尼 害怕 引導者 na ca bhikkhuni moha+ gamina na ca bhikkhuni bhaya+ gamina adv. conj. f.p.Nom. m. f.p.Nom. adv. conj. f.p.Nom. n. f.p.Nom.

不是被愚痴引導的、且不是被害怕引導的。

are not biased through delusion, are not biased through fear.

Ayya kho kuladusaka papasamacara,

大姐 而 良家 破壞者 壞 行爲 kho kula + dusaka papa+samacara f.s.Nom. adv. n. f.s.Nom. adj. f.s.Nom.

大姐是好家庭的破壞者、行爲不好,

You, lady, are a corrupter of families, a woman of depraved conduct.

kho papaka samacara dissanti ayyaya c'eva suyyanti ca, 大姐 見 澴 和 而 行爲 和 kho papaka samacara dassati ca + eva sunati ca f.s.Gen. adv. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. pass.3p.pr. conj. adv. pass.3p.pr. conj.

而大姐的壞行爲既被看見又被聽見,

Your depraved conduct is both seen and heard about,

dutthani dissanti c'eva kulani c'ayyaya suyyanti ca. 良家 和 大姐 破壞 看見 和 和 kula dussati ca dassati ca + eva sunati ca f.s.Ins. pp.(n.p.Nom.) pass.3p.pr. adv. pass.3p.pr. n.p.Nom. conj.

且大姐所破壞的好家庭既被看見又被聽見。

and the families you have corrupted are both seen and heard about.

Pakkamat'ayya, imamha avasa, alam te idha vasena"ti.

離開 大姐 這 地方 足夠 她們(=妳) 這 住 pakkamati ima alam idha vasena + iti avasa tvam m.s.Abl. 3s.imp. f.s.Nom. m.s.Abl. ind. 2p.Nom. adv. m.s.Ins. ind.

請大姐離開這個地方,妳住在這裡夠(久)了。

Leave this monastery, lady. Enough of your staying here."

Evabca bhikkhunihi bhikkhuni tath'eva sa vuccamana pagganheyya, 如此 和 這 比丘尼 比丘尼 勸告 如此 努力 evam +ca bhikkhuni bhikkhuni vuccati tatha + eva pa+ganhati ta f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) adv. 3s.opt. adv.conj.

該比丘尼被諸比丘尼這樣勸告時,仍然那樣堅持,

And should that bhikkhuni, thus admonished by the bhikkhunis, persist as before,

sa bhikkhuni bhikkhunihi yavatatiyam samanubhasitabba tassa patinissaggaya.

比丘尼 這 比丘尼 直到 第三 它 放棄 bhikkhuni bhikkhuni vava + tativam samanubhasati patinissajjati ta ta f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. adv. grd.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Gen. f.s.Nom. m.s.Dat.

諸比丘尼應該乃至三次勸告該比丘尼放棄它。

the bhikkhunis are to rebuke her up to three times so as to desist.

Yavatatiyab'ce samanubhasiyamana tam patinissajjeyya, icc'etam kusalam. No ce patinissajjeyya,

```
如是 那
                                                                                  不 如果
                                                放棄
                                                                                             patinissajjati
vava+tativam + ce
                    samanubhasati
                                        ta patinissajjati
                                                             iti+ eta
                                                                          kusala
                                                                                   no ce
          adv. conj.
                      ppr.(f.s.Nom.) f.s.Acc.
                                                 3s.opt.
                                                           n.s.Nom.
                                                                       n.s.Nom.
                                                                                  adv. conj.
                                                                                                3s.opt.
```

如果到了第三次被勸告時,(她)放棄它,那就好。如果不放棄,

If while being rebuked up to three times she desists, that is good. If she does not desist,

ayampi bhikkhuni yavatatiyakam dhammam apanna nissaraniyam savghadisesam

```
這也
            比丘尼
                        直到 第三
                                           法
                                                                  逐出
ayam+pi
         bhikkhuni
                      yava+tatiyaka
                                         dhamma
                                                                nissaraniya
                                                                                  savghadisesa
                                                      apanna
f.s.Nom.
           f.s.Nom.
                         m.s.Acc.
                                         m.s.Acc.
                                                                  grd.(f.s.Acc.)
                                                                                   adj.(f.s.Acc.)
                                                    p pp.(f.s.Acc.)
```

直到第三次,那麼,該比丘尼犯應逐出的僧殘法。

then this bhikkhuni, also, as soon as she has fallen into the third act of offence, is to be (temporarily) driven out, and it entails initial and subsequent meetings of the Community.

Uddittha kho ayyayo sattarasa savghadisesa dhamma nava pathamapattika, attha yavatatiyaka,

```
僧殘
                          十七
                                                  規則
                                                                 初次
                                               dhamma
                                                              pathama+apattika
   uddisati kho
                                 savghadisesa
                     sattarasa
                                                                                       yava+tatiyaka
                                               m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom.
pp.(m.p.Nom.)adv. f.p.Voc.
                                  m.p.Nom.
                                                                   m.p.Nom.
                                                                               m.p.Nom.
                                                                                           m.p.Nom.
```

諸大姐!十七僧殘的規則已經誦出了。九條戒是初次即犯,八(條戒)是到了第三次(羯磨才犯)。

The ladies, the Seventeen Rules entailing Initial and Subsequent Meeting of the Savgha have been recited, nine being established at once upon being apatti and eight upon the third (remostration),

Yesam bhikkhuni abbataram va abbataram va apajjati,

```
任何 比丘尼 隨一 犯、進入
ya bhikkhuni abbatara abbatara apajjati
f.p.Gen. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. 3s.pr.
```

若比丘尼犯了其中的任一條,

in any one of which if a bhikkhuni admits to be at fault,

taya bhikkhuniya ubhatosavghe pakkhamanattam caritabbam.

```
這 比丘尼 二部 僧團 半月 摩那埵 應行
ta bhikkhuni ubhato + savgha pakkha+manatta caritabba
f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins. grd.(m.s.Nom.) m. m.s.Acc. grd.(m.s.Nom.)
```

這比丘尼應行履行二部僧團的半月摩那埵,

she must live on probation with no choice in the matter for as many days as she knowingly concealed (the fault). When the bhikkhuni has finished the probation she must undertake from both Communities in addition the half-month penance for bhikkhunis.

Cinnamanatta bhikkhuni yattha siya visatigano bhikkhunisavgho, 舉行 摩那埵、復權 比丘尼 那裡 有 二十 累 比丘尼 cinna (< carati pp.)+manatta bhikkhuni yattha atthi visati+gana bhikkhuni+savgha f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f. m.s.Nom. adv. 3s.opt. m.s.Nom.

舉行復權的比丘尼,在那裡應有二十位比丘尼的僧團,

When the bhikkhuni has completed the penance she must be reinstated where is there a Savgha of bhikkhunis comprising a chapter of twenty.

tattha sa bhikkhuni abbhetabba. Ekayapi ce visatigano bhikkhunisavgho uno 這裡 這 比丘尼 不足 二十 眾 比丘尼 bhikkhuni abbheti ekena+ api bhikkhuni+savgha una visati+gana adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.) f.s.Ins. ind. conj. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. f. m.s.Nom 即使只差一位,不足二十位的比丘尼僧團,

If a Savgha of bhikkhunis comprising a chapter of even one less than twenty

tam bhikkhunim abbheyya, sa ca bhikkhuni anabbhita, 比丘尼 出罪 和 比丘尼 不 出罪 這 這 bhikkhuni abbheti bhikkhuni an+abbeti ca f.s.Acc. f.s.Acc. 3s.opt. f.s.Nom. conj. f.s.Nom. adj.(m.s.Nom.)

爲這位比丘尼出罪的話,這位比丘尼未出罪,

should (proceed to) reinstate that bhikkhuni then that bhikkhuni is not reinstated,

bhikkhuniyo garayha, ta Ayam tattha samici. ca 洁些 和 諸比丘尼 應呵青 這 在這裡 下確的 bhikkhuni garahati ima tattha samici ca f.p.Nom. conj. f.p.Nom. grd.(m.p.Nom.) f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.

而且這些比丘尼應該被呵責。在這裡這是正確的(過程)。

and those bhikkhunis are censurable. This is the proper course here.

Tatth'ayyayo pucchami: Kacci'ttha parisuddha? 這裡 大姐 清淨 我問 是否 於此 tattha pucchati ettha pp. of parisujjhati kacci adv. 1s.pr. ind. m.p.Nom. f.p.Acc.

在這裡我問諸大姐:「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨?」

Herein I ask the ladies: Are you pure in this?

Dutiyam'pi pucchami: Kacci'ttha parisuddha?

第二 也 問 是否 於此 清淨 dutiyam+ api pucchati kacci ettha pp. of parisujjhati m.s.Acc. ind. 1s.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

第二次我再問:「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨?」

For the second times I ask the ladies: Are you pure in this?

Tatiyam'pi pucchami: Kacci'ttha parisuddha?

第三 也 問 是否 於此 清淨 tatiyam + api pucchati kacci ettha pp. of parisujjhati m.s.Acc. ind. ls.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

第三次我再問:「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨?」

For the third times I ask the ladies: Are you pure in this?

Parisuddh'etth'ayyayo, tasma tunhi, evam etam dharayamiti.

認為 清淨 在此 大姐 因此 沈默 如此 這 parisuddha ettha tunhi evam dharati ta eta adv. f.p.Nom. adv. m.p.Nom. m.s.Abl. adv. 1s.pr. m.s.Acc.

諸大姐於此(類戒)是清淨的,所以默然。我如此認定這件事。

The ladies are pure herein; that is why they are silent. So do I record it.

~Savghadiseso nitthito.~

Nissaggiyapacittiya 捨懺戒

Ime kho panayyayo timsa nissaggiya pacittiya dhamma uddesam agacchanti. 這裡 又 大姐 三十 捨 懺 規則 誦 來 inssaggiya nacittiya dhamma uddesati agacchati

ima kho pana nissaggiya pacittiya dhamma uddesati agacchati m.p.Nom. adv. f.p.Voc. adj.(m.p.Nom.) m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. m.s.Acc. 3p.pr.

諸大姐!現在到了誦出這三十捨懺戒。

Now, the ladies, the Thirty Rules entailing Expiation with Forfeiture come up for recitation.

Pattavaggopathamo 缽品第一

1. Ya pana bhikkhuni pattasannicayam kareyya, nissaggiyam pacittiyam.

犯懺悔、波逸提 任何 比丘尼 囤積 做 捨懺、尼薩耆 bhikkhuni paccittiya ya pana patta + sannicaya karoti nissaggiya f.s.Nom.adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.) 3s.opt.

一、若比丘尼,囤積缽者,犯捨懺。¹

1. Should any bhikkhuni make a bowl-hoard (have more than one bowl in her possession), it is to be forfeited and confessed.

¹ Paci.IV,245(CS:pg.320):「不犯:於黎明前受持、說淨、損壞、失掉、打破、燒毀、被搶走而取回者,以親厚 想取,癡狂者,最初之犯行者。」

*2.Akalacivarabhajanasikkhapadam 以非時衣(爲時衣而)分配

2. Ya pana bhikkhuni akalacivaram "kalacivaran" ti adhitthahitva bhajapeyya,

```
任何
              比丘尼
                         非 時 衣
                                                              執持
                                                 衣
                                                                              分配
  ya pana
             bhikkhuni
                         a+ kala+civara
                                           kala+civara
                                                             adhitthahati
                                                                            <br/>bhajeti
f.s.Nom.adv. f.s.Nom.
                          m. n.s.Nom.
                                           m. n.s.Nom.
                                                              ger.
                                                                          caus.(3s.opt.)
```

nissaggiyam pacittiyam.

```
捨 懺 nissaggiya pacittiya adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

- 二、若比丘尼,執持非時衣,分配爲時衣者,犯捨懺。1
- 2. Should any bhikkhuni, having determined an out-of-season cloth to be an in-season cloth, distribute it, it is to be forfeited and confessed.
- *3.Civaraparivattanasikkhapadam 交換衣(之後奪回)
- 3. Ya pana bhikkhuni bhikkhuniya saddhim civaram parivattetva sa paccha evam vadeyya--比丘尼 比丘尼 衣 交換 ya pana bhikkhuni bhikkhuni saddhim civara parivatteti ta paccha evam <vadati f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Ins. adv. ger. f.s.Nom. adv. adv. 3s.opt. n.
- 三、若比丘尼,與(其他)比丘尼交換衣,之後她這樣說:
- 3. Should any bhikkhuni, having exchanged robe-cloth with another bhikkhuni, later say to her,

```
"handayye, tuyham civaram, ahara metam civaram, yam tuyham tuyhamevetam,
   大姐妳
                                  給
                                        我
                                             彼
                                                    衣
handa+ ayye
             tuyham
                       civara
                                  ahara me + tam civara
                                                           vam
                                                                  tuvham
                                                                          tuyham + eva + tam
f.s.Voc. s.Gen.
                       n.s.Acc. 2s.imp. s.Gen. n.s.Acc. n.s.Acc.
                                                           n.s.Nom. s.Gen.
                                                                           s.Gen.
                                                                                    n.s.Acc.
```

「喂!大姐!妳的衣,還衣給我。妳的衣是妳的,

"Here, lady. This is your robe-cloth. Bring me that robe-cloth of mine.

yam mayham mayhamevetam, ahara metam civaram, sakam paccahara"ti

我 正是 彼 帶來 我的 彼 自己 拿回去 衣 vam aham mayham+eva+tam aharati me+tam civara sakam paccahara n.s.Nom. s.Gen. s.Gen. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. s.Gen.n.s.Acc. m.s.Nom. adj. 2s.imp.

我的衣是我的。我的衣拿來,(妳)自己的拿去!」

What was yours is still yours. What was mine is still mine. Bring me that one of mine. Take yours back,"

 $^{^1}$ Paci.IV,246(CS:pg.322):「不犯:分配非時衣為時衣想,分配時衣為時衣,癡狂者,最初之犯行者。」

acchindeyya va acchindapeyya va, nissaggiyam pacittiyam.

指奪 或 搶奪 或 捨 懺 acchindati acchindati grd. grd.caus. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom.

而搶奪或使人搶奪者,犯捨懺。!

and then snatch it back or have it snatched back, it is to be forfeited and confessed.

*4.Abbavibbapanasikkhapadam 索求(更索求)

4. Ya pana bhikkhuni abbam vibbapetva abbam vibbapeyya, nissaggiyam pacittiyam.

```
另外的
                                   乞討
                                                另外的
                                                            乞討
                                                                                             懺
              比丘尼
ya pana bhikkhuni
                                                          vibbapeyya
                                                                                          pacittiya
                       abbam
                                  vijanati
                                                abbam
                                                                          nissaggiya
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.
                        adj.
                                   ger.
                                                adj.
                                                         caus.3s.opt.
                                                                        adj.(f.s.Nom.)
                                                                                      adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

四、若比丘尼,先索求某物,後索求別的,犯捨懺。2

4. Should any bhikkhuni, having had one thing requested, (then send it back and) have another thing requested, it is to be forfeited and confessed.

*5.Abbacetapanasikkhapadam 購某物(後換購某物)

5. Ya pana bhikkhuni abbam cetapetva abbam cetapeyya, nissaggiyam pacittiyam.

-			-		1 00 .			
任何	比丘尼	另外的	等値、購	另外的	等値、購	捨	懺	
ya pana	bhikkhun i	abbam	cetapeti	abbam	cetapeti	nissaggiya	pacittiya	
f.s.Nom. ad	v. f.s.Nom.	adj.	ger.	adj.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)	adj.(f.s.Non	n.)

五、若比丘尼,先交易某物,後換別的,犯捨懺。

5. Should any bhikkhuni, having had one thing bought, (then send it back and) have another thing bought, it is to be forfeited and confessed.

*6.Pathamasavghikacetapanasikkhapadam 僧伽購某物(1)

6.Ya pana bhikkhuni abbadatthikena parikkharena abbuddisikena savghikena abbam cetapeyya,

```
比丘尼 另外的、某 資財
                                            他物
                                                     某 指定、分配
                                                                     僧伽
                                                                              某(=他物)
ya pana bhikkhuni
                     abba + datthika
                                                      abba + uddisika
                                      parikkhara
                                                                     savghika
                                                                                 abbam
                                                                                           cetapeti
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.
                           adj.(s.Ins.)
                                          s.Ins.
                                                              s.Ins.
                                                                        s.Ins.
                                                                                m.n.Acc.
                                                                                            3s.opt.
```

nissaggiyam pacittiyam.

捨 懺 nissagga+iya pa+citta+ika adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

六、若比丘尼,使用已爲僧團指定交易某物的某資財,卻改交易他物者,犯捨懺。³

6. Should any bhikkhuni, using a fund intended for one purpose, dedicated to one purpose for a Community, have something else bought, it is to be forfeited and confessed.

² 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1034.2):「若比丘尼欲索是,更索彼者,尼薩耆波逸提。」

 $^{^1}$ Paci.IV,246(CS:pg.322):「不犯:該尼施與,或該尼之親友取之,癡狂者,最初之犯行者。」

Paci.IV,249(CS:pg.325):「不犯:乞此物(不足)又乞(可成一套之)他物,乞他物有利得,癡狂者,最初之犯行者。」 3 Paci.IV,251(CS:pg.328):「不犯:(購此)所餘用以購他物,問施主而轉用,事故時,癡狂者,最初之犯行者。」

*7.Dutiyasavghikacetapanasikkhapadam 僧伽購某物(2)

7. Ya pana bhikkhuni abbadatthikena parikkharena abbuddisikena savghikena sabbacikena

比丘尼 某 指定 僧伽 資財 他物 ya pana bhikkhuni abba+ datthika parikkhara abba + uddisika sabbacika savghika f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(s.Ins.) s.Ins. s.Ins. s.Ins. s.Ins.

abbam cetapeyya, nissaggiyam pacittiyam.

某(=他物) 交易、購 捨 懺 abbam cetapeti nissaggiya pacittiya m.n.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 七、若比丘尼,使用已爲僧團指定交易<u>某物</u>的某資財,自己乞求交易他物者,犯 捨懺。
- 7. Should any bhikkhuni, having herself asked for a fund intended for one purpose, dedicated to one purpose for a Community, use it to have something else bought, it is to be forfeited and confessed.
- *8.Pathamaganikacetapanasikkhapadam 大眾購某物(1)
- 8. Ya pana bhikkhuni abbadatthikena parikkharena abbuddisikena mahajanikena

任何 比丘尼 另外的、某 資財 他物 某 指定 大眾 ya pana bhikkhuni abba + datthika parikkhara abba + uddisika mahajanika f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(s.Ins.) s.Ins. s.Ins. m.s.Ins.

abbam cetapeyya, nissaggiyam pacittiyam.

某(=他物) 交易、購 捨 懺 abbam cetapeti nissaggaiya pacittaika m.n.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 八、若比丘尼,使用已爲大眾指定交易某物的某資財,卻交易他物者,犯捨懺。
- 8. Should any bhikkhuni, using a fund intended for one purpose, dedicated to one purpose for a group, have something else bought, it is to be forfeited and confessed.
- *9.Dutiyaganikacetapanasikkhapadam 大眾購某物(2)
- 9. Ya pana bhikkhuni abbadatthikena <u>parikkharena abb</u>uddisikena mahajanikena

任何 比丘尼 某 資財 他物 某 指定 大眾 bhikkhun**i** abba+datthika parikkhara abba + uddisika mahajanika ya pana f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(s.Ins.) s.Ins. s.Ins. m.s.Ins.

sabbacikena abbam cetapeyya, nissaggiyam pacittiyam.

自己乞求 某(=他物) 交易、購 捨 懺 sabbacika abbam cetapeti nissaggaiya pacittaika s.Ins. m.n.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 九、若比丘尼,使用已為大眾指定交易<u>某物</u>的某資財,自己乞求交易他物者,犯 捨懺。
- 9. Should any bhikkhuni, having herself asked for a fund intended for one purpose, dedicated to one purpose for a group, use it to have something else bought, it is to be forfeited and confessed.

*10.Puggalikacetapanasikkhapadam 個人購某物(1)

10. Ya pana bhikkhuni abbadatthikena parikkharena abbuddisikena puggalikena sabbacikena

比丘尼 杳財 他物 某 指定 個人 bhikkhuni abba+datthika parikkhara abba + uddisika puggalika sabbacika ya pana adj.(s.Ins.) f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. s.Ins. s Ins s.Ins. s.Ins.

abbam nissaggiyam pacittiyam. cetapeyya,

交易、購 某(=他物) 懺 abba cetapeti nissaggaiya pacittaika m.n.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 一○、若比丘尼,使用已爲個人指定交易某物的某資財,自己乞求交易他物者, 犯捨懺。
- 10. Should any bhikkhuni, having herself asked for a fund intended for one purpose, dedicated to one purpose for an individual, use it to have something else bought, it is to be forfeited and confessed.

~Pattavaggo pathamo.~

Civaravaggodutiyo 衣品第二

- *11.Garupavuranasikkhapadam 求重衣者(最高可值四個「康沙」)
- 11.Garupavuranam¹ pana bhikkhuniya cetapentiya² catukkamsaparamam cetapetabbam.³

四個 銅幣、康沙 最高 寬大外衣 比丘尼 乞求、告知 等值 garu+ pavurana bhikkhuni vibbapenta catu + kamsa + parama cetapeti n.s.Nom. f.s.Ins. pp.(f.s.Ins.) adj.(n.s.Acc.) adi. adv. grd.(n.s.Acc.)

Tato ce uttari cetapeyya, nissaggiyam pacittiyam. 此 如果 招渦 等値 捨 nissaggaiya pacittaika ta ce uttari cetapeti n.s.Abl. conj. adv. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 十一、若比丘尼乞求重衣者,最高可求值四個「康沙」,若過此等值,犯捨懺。
- 11. When a bhikkhuni is asking for a heavy cloth, one worth four "bronzes" at most may be asked for. If she asks for more than that, it is to be forfeited and confessed.
- *12.Lahupavuranasikkhapadam 求輕衣者(最高可值兩個半「康沙」)
- 12.Lahupavuranam pana bhikkhuniya cetapentiya addhateyyakamsaparamam cetapetabbam.

三個減半 銅幣 最高 輕 寬大外衣 比丘尼 乞求、告知 bhikkhuni lahu+ pavurana vibbapenta addhateyya+kamsa + parama cetapeti n.s.Nom. f.s.Ins. pp.(f.s.Ins.) adj.(n.s.Acc.) grd.(n.s.Acc.) adj. adv.

² Paci.IV,255(CS:pg.336):「乞求:告知,教。」

¹ Paci.IV,255(CS:pg.336):「重衣:凡是在寒天用的寬大外衣。」

³ Paci.IV,256(CS:pg.336):「**最高可求值四個「康沙」之值**:值十六個迦利沙缽拿。」(迦利沙缽拿:硬幣,大約 值 12 pence(便士)的英國舊幣。1971 年未進行幣值十進位之前,一英鎊等於 20 先令,而 1 先令又等於 12便士。 換言之,一英鎊等於240便士。)

Tato ce uttari cetapeyya, nissaggiyam pacittiyam.

此 如果 超過 等値 捨 懺 ta ce uttari cetapeti nissaggaiya pacittaika n.s.Abl. conj. adv. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 十二、若比丘尼乞求輕衣者,最高可求值兩個半「康沙」,若過此等值,犯捨懺。
- 12. When a bhikkhuni is asking for a light cloth, one worth two and a half "bronzes" at most may be asked for. If she asks for more than that, it is to be forfeited and confessed.
- 13.Kathinasikkhapadam 迦提那(捨後, 額外的布最多可存十天) (=Bhikkhu NP 1)
- ¹13.Nitthitacivarasmim bhikkhuniya ubbhatasmim kathine dasahaparamam atirekacivaram 捨,除去 **迦提那、嘎**廷 比丘尼 日 最高 nitthita< nitthati+civara bhikkhuni ubbhata < uddharati kathina dasa+aha+parama atireka + civara adj. n.s.Nom. n.s.Loc. f.s.Ins. m.s.Loc. pp.(m.s.Loc.) n.s.Acc. pp.
 - 十三、當比丘尼備妥了衣服、已經捨去迦提那(雨安居功德衣的特許)時,
 - 13. When a bhikkhuni has finished her robe and the frame is destroyed (her kathina privileges are in abeyance),

dharetabbam. Tam atikkamentiya, nissaggiyam pacittiyam.

保有 它 超過 捨 懺 dharati ta atikkamaya nissaggaiya pacittaika grd.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. adj.(f.s.Abl.) adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

額外的布最多可以保存十天,超過這(期限)的話,犯捨懺。

she is to keep extra robe-cloth ten days at most. Beyond that, it is to be forfeited and confessed.

- 14.²Udositasikkhapadam離開三衣過夜(=Bhikkhu NP 2)
- 14. Nitthitacivarasmim bhikkhuniya ubbhatasmim kathine ekarattam'pi ce bhikkhuni

捨,除去 夜 甚至 完了 衣服 比丘尼 迦提那 如果 比丘尼 nitthita + civara bhikkhuni uddharati kathina eka+rattam +api bhikkhuni m.s.Loc. f.s.Ins. pp.(m.s.Loc.) m.s.Loc. n.s.Acc. ind. f.s.Nom. pp. conj.

- 十四、當比丘尼備妥好了衣服、已經捨迦提那(功德衣的特許)時,比丘尼即使一個晚上
- 14. When a bhikkhuni has finished her robe and the frame is destroyed (her kathina privileges are in abeyance): If she dwells apart from (any of) her five robes even for one night

ticivarena vippavaseyya abbatra bhikkhunisammutiya, nissaggiyam pacittiyam.

三 衣 離開而住 除了 比丘尼 同意 捨 懺 ti+civara vippavasati abbatra bhikkhuni+sammuti nissaggaiya pacittaika n.s.Ins. 3s.opt. adv. f. f.s.Abl. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

離開三衣而住的話,除了比丘尼(僧團)同意外,犯捨懺。

— unless authorized by the bhikkhunis — it is to be forfeited and confessed.

¹ 13~30 條,順次同比丘戒捨懺之 1、2、3、6、7、8、9、10、18、19、20、22、23、25、26、27、28、30。

² Udosita: 原意爲「小屋」。

15.Akalacivarasikkhapadam 非時衣(=Bhikkhu NP 3)

15.Nitthitacivarasmim bhikkhuniya ubbhatasmim kathine, bhikkhuniya pan'eva akalacivaram

```
捨,除去
完了
            衣服
                        比丘尼
                                                   迦提那
                                                              比丘尼
                                                                             強調詞
nitthati
                      bhikkhuni
                                      uddharati
          civara
                                                  kathina
                                                            bhikkhuni
                                                                        pana+eva
                                                                                     a+kala+civara
          m.s.Loc.
                        f.s.Ins.
                                                               f.s.Dat.
                                                                                         m. n.s.Nom.
                                    pp.(m.s.Loc.)
                                                   m.s.Loc.
                                                                             adv.
pp.
```

- 十五、當比丘尼備妥了衣服、已經捨出迦提那(功德衣的特許)時,如果在不恰當 的時間
- 15. When a bhikkhuni has finished her robe and the frame is destroyed (her kathina privileges are in abeyance): Should out-of-season robe-cloth accrue to her,

```
uppajjeyya, akavkhamanaya bhikkhuniya patiggahetabbam, patiggahetva khippam eva
```

```
出現
                希望
                                      比丘尼
                                                                              接受
                                                       patigganhati
               akankhati
                                     bhikkhuni
ud-pajjati
                                                                             patigganhati
                                                                                              khippa
                                                                                                         eva
                                                                             ger.
               adj.(f.s.Ins.)
3s.opt.
                                    f.s.Ins.
                                                  grd.(m.s.Nom.)
                                                                                      adv.(m.s.Acc.)
                                                                                                      adv.
```

有布料要給比丘尼,想要(衣)的比丘尼可以接受,接受後應該儘快作好。

she may accept it if she so desires. Having accepted it, she is to make it up immediately (into a cloth requisite).

karetabbam. No c'assa paripuri masaparamam taya bhikkhuniya tam civaram

```
作
                     如果 這
                                    足夠
                                               月
                                                      最多
                                                               這
                                                                         比丘尼
                                                                                       這
                                                                                                布
                                                                         bhikkhuni
  karoti
                   ce
                         ayam
                                  paripuri
                                              masa+parama
                                                                ta
                                                                                       ta
                                                                                               civara
grd.(m.s.Nom.) adv.conj. f.s.Gen.
                                 f.s.Nom.
                                              m.
                                                    m.s.Acc.
                                                               f.s.Ins.
                                                                         f.s.Ins.
                                                                                  n.s.Nom.
                                                                                            n.s.Nom.
```

如果這(布料)不夠(作成衣),那位比丘尼最多可以存放這塊布一個月,

But should it not be enough, she may lay it aside for a month at most

nikkhipitabbam unassa paripuriya satiya paccasaya. Tato ce uttarim nikkhipeyya

```
存放
                                                       期待
                                                                       此
                     不足
                               完全
                                            是
                                                                           如果
                                                                                  超過
                                                                                            存放
                            pari+puri
nikkhipati
                                          atthi
                                                  pati+asa(梵 awa)希望 ta
                                                                                            nikkhipati
                    una
                                                                                 uttarim
                           f.s.Gen. ppr.(f.s.Loc.)
                  f.s.Gen.
grd.(n.s.Nom.)
                                                    f.s.Loc.
                                                                   m.s.Abl. conj.
                                                                                  adv.
                                                                                             3s.opt.
```

以期補足不夠的。如果存放超過這(期限),

if she has an expectation for filling the lack. If she should keep it beyond that,

```
satiya'pi paccasaya, nissaggiyam pacittiyam.
```

```
是 甚至 期待 捨 懺 atthi+api pati+asa nissaggaiya pacittaika f.s.Loc.ind. f.s.Loc. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

即使是爲了期待(補足不夠的),犯捨懺。

even when she has an expectation (for further cloth), it is to be forfeited and confessed.

16.Abbatakavibbattisikkhapadam(向沒有親戚關係者)乞求衣(=Bhikkhu NP 6)

16.Ya pana bhikkhuni abbatakam gahapatim va gahapatanim va civaram vibbapevva 任何 比丘尼 無 親戚 在家男 或 在家女 布料 gahapatani ya pana bhikkhuni a+bataka gahapati va va civara vijanati f.s.Nom.adv. f.s.Nom. adi.(m.s.Acc.) m.s.Acc. coni. f.s.Acc. coni. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt.

十六、若比丘尼向沒有親戚關係的在家男或女乞求衣(料),

16. Should any bhikkhuni ask for robe-cloth from a man or woman householder unrelated to her,

abbatra samaya, nissaggiyam pacittiyam. Tatthayam samayo, acchinnacivara va hoti 除了 情況 時候 在此 這 情況 條件 被偷 衣 或 abbatra nissaggaiya samaya pacittaika tattha+ayam samaya <acchindati + civara adv. n.s.Abl. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. adv. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. pp. f.s.Nom.

除了(適當的)情況以外,犯捨懺。這裡的適當情況是這樣:比丘尼的衣服被偷、except at the proper occasion, it is to be forfeited and confessed. Here the proper occasion is this: The bhikkhuni's robe has been snatched away

bhikkhuni natthacivara va, ayam tattha samayo.

比丘尼 失去 衣 或 這 如此 情況 bhikkhuni nassati civara va ima tattha samaya f.s.Nom. m.p.Nom. conj. m.s.Nom. adv. m.s.Nom.

或是衣服破掉。這是這裡的適當情況。

or destroyed. This is the proper occasion here.

- 17.Tatuttarisikkhapadam 接受非親戚在家人的布料(=Bhikkhu NP 7)
- 17. Tabce abbatako gahapati va gahapatani va bahuhi civarehi abhihatthum pavareyya 她 如果 無 親戚 在家男 或 在家女 或 許多 布料 拿 邀請 恣意 a+bataka abhiharati tam + cegahapatani va bahu civara gahapati va pavareti m.s.Acc. conj. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. conj. f.s.Nom. conj. n.p.Ins. inf. n.p.Ins. 3s.opt.

十七、沒有親戚關係的在家男或女邀請,恣意地拿許多布料,

17. If that unrelated man or woman householder presents the bhikkhuni with many robes (pieces of robe-cloth),

santaruttaraparaman taya bhikkhuniya tato civaram saditabbam.

上 最多 這 比丘尼 此 布料 接受 santara+uttara+parama bhikkhuni civara sadiyati ta ta m.s.Acc. f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins. n.s.Abl. n.s.Nom. grd.(m.s.Nom.)

這位比丘尼最多可以接受內裙及上衣(的布料)。

she is to accept at most (enough for) an upper and a lower robe.

Tato ce uttari sadiyeyya, nissaggiyam pacittiyam.

此 如果 超過 接受 捨 懺 ta ce uttari sadiyati nissaggaiya pacittaika n.s.Abl. conj. adv. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

如果接受超過這(限量),犯捨懺。

If she accepts more than that, it is to be forfeited and confessed.

18.Pathama-upakkhatasikkhapadam(指定非親戚在家人)準備布料(1) (=Bhikkhu NP 8)

18.Bhikkhunim pan'eva uddissa abbatakassa gahapatissa va gahapataniya va civaracetapanam 比丘尼 而強調詞 指定 無親戚 在家男 或 在家女 或 布料 等值品

bhikkhuni pana+eva uddisati a+bataka gahapati va gahapatani civara+<cetapeti f.s.Gen. f.s.Acc. adv. ind. ger. m.s.Gen. m.s.Gen. conj. conj. n.s.Nom.

十八、若比丘尼,指定非親戚關係的在家男或女備妥了布料的資金,

18. In case a man or woman householder unrelated (to the bhikkhuni)

upakkhatam hoti, "Imina civaracetapannena civaram cetapetva itthannamam

準備	有	這	布料	等値品	布料	交換	這樣子 稱呼
upa+karoti	< hu	ima	civara	a+ <cetapeti< td=""><td>civara</td><td>cetapeti</td><td>ittha+nama</td></cetapeti<>	civara	cetapeti	ittha+nama
pp.(n.s.Nom.)	3s.pr.	m.s.Ins.	n.	n.s.Ins.	n.s.Acc.	ger.	m.s.Acc.

bhikkhunim civarena acchadessami" ti,

```
比丘尼 布料 穿
bhikkhuni civara acchadeti + iti
f.s.Acc. n.s.Ins. 1s.fut. ind.
```

(想:)「用這布料的資金買布料後,我要送布料給某某比丘尼穿。」

prepares a robe fund for the sake of a bhikkhuni, thinking. "Having purchased a robe with this robe fund, I will clothe the bhikkhuni named so-and-so with a robe."

tatra cesa bhikkhuni pubbe appavarita upasavkamitva civare vikappam apajjeyya,

```
然後 如果 這
                 比丘尼
                             之前
                                                      前往
                                                                 布料
                                                                           考慮
                                                                                     做 提議
               bhikkhuni pubba
      ce + ta
                                  a+pavareti
                                               upa+sam+kamati
                                                                          vikappa
                                                                                      apajjati
adv. conj. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m.s.Loc. pp.(m.s.Nom.)
                                                                n.s.Loc.
                                                                          m.s.Acc.
                                                                                       3s.opt.
```

然後,如果這位比丘尼未受邀請前就去對布料提出建議,說:

If the bhikkhuni, not previously invited, approaching (the householder) should make a stipulation with regard to the robe, saying,

"Sadhu vata mam ayasma imina civaracetapannena evarupam va

```
大德
                                       布料
                                               等値品
                                                          如此 形態
   好
        實在 我
                               這
                                                                       或
sadhu
        vata aham ayasmant
                               ima
                                       civara+<cetapeti
                                                           eva+ rupa
                                                                       va
       adv. m.s.Acc. m.s.Nom. m.s.Ins.
interi.
                                              n s Ins
                                                             n.s.Acc.
                                                                       conj.
```

「實在很好,請大德用這布料的資金買這樣子那樣子的布料送給我。」

"It would be good indeed, sir, if you clothed me (with a robe), having purchased a robe of such-and-such a sort with this robe fund"

(n-c-e)Bhikkhui	ninatim	akkha
10-0-6	IDHIKKHUI	прации	эккпа

evarupam va civaram cetapetva acchadehi''ti, kalyanakamyatam upadaya, nissaggiyam pacittiyam.

如此 形態 衣服 交換 湀 好的 欲求 因於 civara cetapeti acchadeti kalyana+kamyata upadiyati nissaggaiya eva+rupa va pacittaika adj. f.s.Acc. ger. adv. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.) n.s.Acc. conj. n.s.Acc. ger. 2s.imp.

出於想要好的布料,犯捨懺。

- out of a desire for something fine it is to be forfeited and confessed.
- 19.Dutiya-upakkhatasikkhapadam(指定非親戚在家人)準備布料(2) (=Bhikkhu NP 9)
- 19.Bhikkhunim pan'eva uddissa ubhinnam abbatakanam gahapatinam va gahapataninam

```
比丘尼
           而 強調詞
                         指定
                                   兩個
                                              無親戚
                                                              在家男
                                                                          或
            pana+eva
bhikkhuni
                        uddissati
                                 ubhinna
                                              a+bataka
                                                              gahapati
                                                                          va
                                                                                gahapatani
                                 m.p.Gen.
                                              m.p.Gen.
                                                              m.p.Gen.
f.s.Acc.
          adv.
                  ind.
                         ger.
                                                                          conj.
                                                                                 f.p.Gen.
```

十九、若比丘尼,指定兩位(與該比丘尼)沒有親戚關係的在家男或女

19. In case two householders — men or women — unrelated (to the bhikkhuni)

va paccekacivaracetapannani upakkhata honti, "imehi mayam paccekacivaracetapannehi

```
或
             布料
                     等值品
                                   進備
                                              有
                                                      這
                                                            我們
                                                                      各別
va
      pacceka+civara+cetapeti
                               upa+karoti
                                            < hu
                                                     ima
                                                              aham
                                                                       pacceka + civara + cetapeti
                     n.p.Nom. pp.(m.p.Nom.) 3p.pr. m.p.Ins. m.p.Nom.
                                                                               n. m.
                                                                                        n.p.Ins.
```

備妥了各自的布料資金,(討論說):「用這些各自的布料資金

prepare separate robe funds for the sake of a bhikkhuni, thinking, "Having purchased separate robes with these separate robe funds of ours,

paccekacivarani cetapetva itthannamam bhikkhunim civarehi acchadessama" ti.

```
各別
           布料
                     交換
                                 這樣子
                                          稱呼
                                                   比丘尼
                                                   bhikkhuni
                                                                               acchadeti+iti
pacceka + civara
                     cetapeti
                                  ittha+nama
                                                                   civara
       m.p.Acc.
                                     m.s.Acc.
                                                    f.s.Acc.
                                                                  n.p.Ins.
                                                                                1p.fut. ind.
adj.
                      ger.
```

買各自的布料後,我們就送布料給某某比丘尼。」

we will clothe the bhikkhuni named so-and-so with robes".

Tatra cesa bhikkhuni pubbe appavarito upasavkamitva civare vikappam apajjeyya, 然後 如果 這 比丘尼 之前 考慮 做 提議 不 激請 前往 apajjati tatra ce ta bhikkhuni pubba a+pavareti upa+sam+kamati civara vikappa adv.conj. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. adj.(m.s.Loc.) pp.(m.s.Nom.) n.s.Loc. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. ger.

然後,如果這位比丘尼未受邀請前就去對布料提出建議,說:

If the bhikkhuni, not previously invited, approaching (them) should make a stipulation with regard to the robe, saying,

"Sadhu vata mam ayasmanto imehi paccekacivaracetapannehi evarupam va evarupam 好 實在 大德 這 各自 布料 等值品 如此 形態 如此 形態 sadhu vata aham avasmant ima pacceka+civara+<cetapeti eva+rupa eva+rupa va interj. adv. m.s.Acc. m.p.Nom. m.p.Ins. n.p.Ins. n.s.Acc. conj. n.s.Acc.

va civaram cetapetva acchadetha ubho'va santa ekena"ti

交換 兩個 強調詞 或 湀 acchadeti atthi va civara cetapeti ubho+eva ekena + iti ppr.(m.p.Nom.) conj. n.s.Acc. ger. 2p.imp. adv. m.s.Ins. ind.

「實在很好[,]請諸大德用這些各自的布料資金[,]二人就合買一塊這樣子那樣子的 布料送給我。」

"It would be good indeed, sirs, if you clothed me (with a robe), having purchased a robe of such-and-such a sort with these separate robe funds, the two (funds) together for one (robe)"

kalyanakamyatam upadaya, nissaggiyam pacittiyam.

好的 欲求 因於 捨 懺 kalyana+kamyata upadiyati nissaggaiya pacittaika f.s.Acc. ger.adv. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

出於想要好的(布料),犯捨懺。

- out of a desire for something fine —it is to be forfeited and confessed.
- 20.Rajasikkhapadam 向保管衣資者索取布料(=Bhikkhu NP 10)

20.Bhikkhunim pan'eva uddissa raja va rajabhoggo va brahmano va gahapatiko va dutena

強調詞 為了指定 Ŧ. 婆羅門 使者 比丘尼 或 干. 屬下 在家人 bhikkhuni rajabhogga pana+eva uddissati rajan brahmana gahapatika duta f.s.Acc. adv. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. m.s.Ins. ger.

二十、爲了特定的比丘尼,如果國王、國王的臣屬、婆羅門、或在家人

20. In case a king, a royal official, a brahman, or a householder

civaracetapanam pahineyya,

布料 等值品 派遣 pahinati n.s.Acc. 3s.opt.

派使者送布料的資金(去給她),(說):

sends a robe fund for the sake of a bhikkhuni via a messenger, (saying,)

"imina civaracetapannena civaram cetapetva itthannamam bhikkhunim civarena

這	布料	等值品	布料	交換	這樣子 稱呼	比丘尼	衣服
ima	civara	+cetapanna	civara	cetapeti	ittha+nama	bhikkhun i	civara
n.s.Ins.	n.	n.s.Ins.	n.s.Acc.	ger.	m.s.Acc.	m.s.Acc.	n.s.Ins.

「妳用這布料的資金買布料後,送布料給某某比丘尼。」

"Having purchased a robe with this robe fund, clothe the bhikkhuni named so-and-so with a robe":

acchadehi"ti. So ce duto tam bhikkhunim upasavkamitva evam vadeyya,

這 如果 使者 這 比丘尼 如此 說 acchadeti+ iti ce duta ta bhikkhuni upa+sam+kamati evam vadati 2s.imp.ind. m.s.Nom. conj. m.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. ger. adv. 3s.opt.

如果這位使者參見這位比丘尼後,如此說:

If the messenger, approaching the bhikkhuni, should say,

"idam kho, ayyam uddissa civaracetapanam ayye, abhatam, 這 大姐 帶來 大姐 指定 布料 等值品 ima kho a+bharati uddissati civara + cetapana m.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Voc. f.s.Acc. n.s.Nom. pp.(m.s.Nom.) ger.

「大姐!這布料的資金特別爲大姐帶來了;

"This is a robe fund being delivered for the sake of the lady.

patigganhatayya civaracetapanan"ti. Taya bhikkhuniya so duto evam assa vacaniyo, 大姐 布料 等值品 洁 比丘尼 洁 使者 如此 有 說 (patigganhatu+ayya) civara + cetapanam + iti bhikkhuni duta evam atthi vatti ta ta m.s.Acc. ind. f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. 3s.imp. f.s.Nom. adv. 3s.opt. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

請大姐收下布料的資金。」這位比丘尼可以如此告訴這位使者,說:

May the lady accept this robe fund," then the bhikkhuni is to tell the messenger:

"na kho mayam, avuso, civaracetapanam patigganhama, civarab ca kho mayam 布料 朋友 等値品 布料 和而 patigganhati kho aham avasmant aham civara+cetapana civara ca kho adv. adv. m.p.Nom. m.p.Voc. n.s.Acc. 1p.imp. m.s.Acc. conj. adv. m.p.Nom. n.

patigganhama kalena kappiyan"ti.

接受 時 適合,可允許 patigganhati kala kappiyam< kappiya + iti 1p.imp. m.s.Ins. m.s.Acc. ind.

「朋友!我們不收布料的資金,而布料則我們在恰當的時間適合接受。」

"We do not accept robe funds, my friend. We accept robes (robe-cloth) as are proper according to season."

So bhikkhunim evam ce duto tam vadeyya, 這 如果 使者 比丘尼 如此 這 duta bhikkhuni vadati ce ta evam m.s.Nom. conj. m.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adv.

如果這位使者如此問這位比丘尼:

If the messenger should say to the bhikkhuni,

"atthi panayyaya, koci veyyavaccakaro"ti, 是 而 大姐 任何人 服務 作 atthi pana ka veyyavacca+karo + iti 3s.pr. adv. m.s.Gen. ind.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Nom. ind.

「大姐有任何的侍者嗎?」

"Does the lady have a steward?"

civaratthikaya, bhikkhave, bhikkhuniya veyyavaccakaro niddisitabbo aramiko va

布料 比丘尼 比丘尼 服務 服務道揚的人 或 civara+atthika niddisati bhikkhuni bhikkhuni veyyavacca+karoti aramika f.s.Ins. n. adj.(f.s.Ins.) f.p.Voc. m.s.Nom. grd.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Nom. n.

upasako va, "Eso kho avuso bhikkhuniya veyyavaccakaro"ti.

優婆塞 這 而 朋友 比丘尼 服務 upasaka va eta kho avuso bhikkhuni veyyacacca+karo + iti m.s.Nom. conj. m.s.Nom. adv. m.s.Voc. m.s.Nom. ind. f.p.Gen. n.

諸比丘尼!需要布料的比丘尼可以指出(擔任)侍者的道場服務員或優婆塞,

(說):「朋友!這位是諸比丘尼的侍者。」

then, bhikkhunis, if the bhikkhuni desires a robe, she may indicate a steward — either a monastery attendant or a lay follower — (saying,) "That, sir, is the bhikkhunis' steward."

So tam veyyavaccakaram sabbapetva tam bhikkunim upasavkamitva ce duto 這 如果 使者 指導 duta veyyavacca+karoti sabbapeti bhikkhuni upasam+kamati m.s.Nom. conj. m.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. n. m.s.Acc. ger. f.s.Acc. f.s.Acc. ger.

如果這位使者指導那侍者、拜見那位比丘尼後,

If the messenger, having instructed the steward and going to the bhikkhuni,

evam vadeyya, "yam kho, ayye, ayya veyyavaccakaram niddisi, sabbatto so maya,

如此 指出 指導 那位 而 服務 我 veyyavacca+karoti niddisati sabbapeti evam vadati ya kho ta aham adv. m.s.Acc. adv. f.s.Voc. f.s.Nom. 3s.opt. n. m.s.Acc. 3s.aor. pp.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Nom. m.s.Ins.

如此報告:「大姐!我已經指導大姐指示的那位侍者,

should say, "I have instructed the steward the lady indicated.

upasavkamatayya kalena, civarena tam acchadessati" ti.

前往 大姐 時 布料 妳 送 upasam+kamati kala civara ta(=tvam) acchadeti + iti 3s.imp. f.s.Nom. m.s.Ins. n.s.Ins. m.s.Acc. 3s.fut. ind.

請大姐在恰當的時候去,他就會送布料給妳。」

May the lady go (to her) and she will clothe you with a robe in season,"

Civaratthikaya, bhikkhave, bhikkhuniya veyyavaccakaro upasavkamitva

布料 需要 比丘尼 比丘尼 服務 前往 civara+atthika bhikkhun**i** bhikkhuni veyyavacca+karoti upa+sam+kamati m.s.Nom. adj.(f.s.Ins.) f.p.Voc. f.s.Ins. n. ger.

諸比丘尼!需要布料的比丘尼前往後,

then the bhikkhuni, desiring a robe and approaching the steward,

dvittikkhattum codetabbo saretabbo "attho me avuso civarena"ti.

敦促 使想起 需要 我 朋友 布料 civarena + iti dvi+ti+khattu codeti sareti attha aham avuso adv.(m.s.Acc.) grd.(m.s.Nom.) grd.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Nom. m.s.Ins. m.s.Voc. m.s.Ins. ind.

可以敦促侍者兩三次,提醒(他)說:「朋友!我需要布料。」

may prompt and remind her two or three times, "I have need of a robe."

Dvittikkhattum codayamana sarayamana tam civaram abhinipphadeyya,

二三次敦促使想起這布料實現、帶來div+ti+khattucodetisaretitacivaraabhinipphajjatiadv.(m.s.Acc.) pass.ppr.(f.s.Nom.) pass.ppr.(f.s.Nom.) pass.ppr.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc.n.s.Acc.caus.3s.opt.

icc'etam kusalam.

如此 這 好 iti + eta kusala n.s.Nom. n.s.Nom.

當(侍者)被敦促提醒兩三次時,這布料到手,這樣那就好。

Should (the steward) produce the robe after being prompted and reminded two or three times, that is good.

No ce abhinipphadeyya, catukkhattum, pabcakkhattum, chakkhattuparamam

不 如果 實現 四 次 五 次 六 次 最多 no ce abhinipphajjati catu+khattu pabbca+khattu cha+khattu+parama adv. conj. caus.3s.opt. adv.(m.s.Acc.) adv.(m.s.Acc.) m.s.Acc.

tunhibhutena uddissa thatabbam.

沈默 狀態 爲了 站 tunhi+bhuta uddissati titthati m.s.Ins. ger. grd.(m.s.Acc.)

如果沒有到手,(那比丘尼)可以爲了(布料)沈默地站著四次、五次,最多六次。

If she should not produce the robe, (the bhikkhuni) should stand in silence four times, five times, six times at most for that purpose.

Catukkhattum, pabcakkhattum, chakkhattuparamam tunhibhuto uddissa titthamana

狀熊 几 沈默 站 次 最多 爲了 pabbca+khattu catu+khattu cha+ khattu+parama tunhi+bhuta uddissa titthati adv.(m.s.Acc.) adv.(m.s.Acc.) pp.(m.s.Nom.) ppr.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. ger.

tam civaram abhinipphadeyya, icc'etam kusalam.

這 布料 實現 如此 這 好 ta civara abhinipphajjati iti + eta kusala n.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. caus.3s.opt. n.s.Nom. n.s.Nom.

爲了(布料)沈默地站著四次、五次,最多六次時,如果這布料到手,這樣就就好。

Should (the steward) produce the robe after (the bhikkhuni) has stood in silence for the purpose four, five, six times at most, that is good.

Tato ce uttarim vayamamano, tam civaram abhinipphadeyya, nissaggiyam pacittiyam.

勒於 招渦 這 衣服 uttarim vayamati abhinipphajjati ta ce ta civara nissaggaiya nacittaika caus.3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Abl. conj. adv. ppr.(m.s.Nom.) n.s.Acc. n.s.Acc.

如果沒有到手,當(那比丘尼)盡力超了過那(次數)時,這布料到手(的話),犯捨懺。

If she should not produce the robe (at that point), should she then produce the robe after (the bhikkhuni) has endeavored further than that, it is to be forfeited and confessed.

No ce abhinipphadeyya, yat'assa civaracetapannam abhatam, tattha samam va gantabbam,

從哪裡 妣 不 如果 實現 布料 等值品 拿來 這裡 自己 去 ce abhinipphajjati yato+ assa civara+<cetapeti abharati tattha gacchati no samam va caus.3s.opt. m.s.Abl. f.s.Dat. n.s.Nom. pp.(m.s.Nom.) adv. conj. grd.(m.s.Nom.) adv. conj. adv.

如果(布料)沒有到手,從哪裡爲她送來布料資金,(那比丘尼)就應該親自去、

If she should not produce (the robe), then the bhikkhuni herself should go to the place from which the robe fund was brought,

duto va pahetabbo, "yam kho tumhe ayasmanto bhikkhunim uddissa civaracetapanam pahinittha,

使者 派 彼 而 妳們 大德 比丘尼 爲了 布料 等值品 pahinati duta pahinati ya kho tvam ayasmant bhikkhuni uddissati civara+cetapeti m.s.Nom. grd.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. adv. m.p.Nom. m.p.Voc. f.s.Acc. ger. n. m.s.Acc. 2p.aor.

或應該派使者去那裡(說):「諸大德!您爲了比丘尼送來的那布料的資金,

or a messenger should be sent (to say), "The robe fund that you, venerable sirs, sent for the sake of the bhikkhuni

na tam tassa bhikkhuniya kibci attham anubhoti, yubjant'ayasmanto sakam,

不 此 這 比丘尼 任何 利益 提供 使用 大德 自己的 na ta ta bhikkhuni kim+ci attha anubhoti yubjati avasmant saka m.s.Nom. f.s.Dat. f.s.Dat. n.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. 3s.pr. 3p.imp. m.p.Nom. m.s.Acc.

沒有提供給那位比丘尼任何好處。請大德受用自己的(布料資金),

has given no benefit to the bhikkhuni at all. May the you be united with what is yours.

ma vo sakam vinassi"ti. Ayam tattha samici.

不要 你們的 自己的 失去 這 正確的 這裡 tattha samici ma tvam saka vinassati ima m.p.Gen. m.s.Nom. 2s.aor. f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adv.

您自己的不要失去。在這裡這是正確的(過程)。

May what is yours not be lost." This is the proper course here.

~Civaravaggo dutiyo.~

Pattavaggotatiyo 缽品第三

21.Rupiyasikkhapadam 接受金銀(=Bhikkhu NP 18)

21.Ya pana bhikkhuni jataruparajatam ugganheyya va ugganhapeyya va upanikkhittam va

```
任何 比丘尼 黃金 銀 拿取 或 使拿取 或 存放 或 ya pana bhikkhuni jatarupa+rajata ugganhati ugganhapeti upa+nikkhipati f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. n. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. caus.3s.opt. pp.(m.s.Acc.)
```

sadiyeyya, nissaggiyam pacittiyam.

```
接受 捨 懺 sadiyati nissaggaiya pacittaika 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

- 二十一、若比丘尼允諾拿、或叫人拿、或存放金、銀1,犯捨懺。
- 21. Should any bhikkhuni take gold and silver, or have it taken, or consent to its being deposited (near her), it is to be forfeited and confessed.
- 22.Rupiyasamvoharasikkhapadam 買賣金銀(=Bhikkhu NP 19)
- 22. Ya pana bhikkhuni nanappakarakam rupiyasamvoharam samapajjeyya, nissaggiyam pacittiyam.

```
任何
           比丘尼
                       不同的 種
                                                                   從事
 ya pana bhikkhuni
                        nana+pakaraka
                                         rupiya + samvohara
                                                              samapajjati
                                                                            nissaggaiya
                                                                                          pacittaika
                        adj. m.s.Acc.
f.s.Acc. adv. f.s.Nom.
                                          n.
                                                   m.s.Acc.
                                                                 3s.opt.
                                                                           adj.(f.s.Nom.)
                                                                                         adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

- 二十二、若比丘尼從事於買賣各種2金銀,犯捨懺。
- 22. Should any bhikkhuni engage in various types of monetary exchange, it (the income) is to be forfeited and confessed.
- 23.Kayavikkayasikkhapadam 買賣物品(=Bhikkhu NP 20)
- 23. Ya pana bhikkhuni nanappakarakam kayavikkayam samapajjeyya, nissaggiyam pacittiyam.

```
任何 比丘尼 不同 種 買 賣 從事 捨 懺 ya pana bhikkhuni nana + pakaraka kaya+ vikkaya samapajjati nissaggaiya pacittaika f.s.Nom.adv. f.s.Nom. adj. adj.(m.s.Acc.) m. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

- 二十三、若比丘尼從事於各種3買賣,犯捨懺。
- 23. Should any bhikkhuni engage in various types of trade, (the article obtained) is to be forfeited and confessed.

58

¹ Para.III,238(CS:pg.345):「金:黃金。銀:迦利沙缽拿(硬幣)、銅錢、木錢、樹膠錢等一般的通貨。」

² Para.III,239(CS:Para.pg.348):「各種不同:已成品、未成品、或(兼具)已成品及未成品。已成品:頭飾、頸飾、手飾、腳飾、腰飾。未成品:整塊未成品。已成品及未成品:兩者兼具。」

³ Para.III,242(CS:pg.351):「各種(物品的)買賣:包括:衣服、食物、被褥、藥、化妝品、牙籤、紗線等。」

- 24. Unapabcabandhanasikkhapadam 以未滿五綴(的缽換新缽) (=Bhikkhu NP 22)
- 24. Ya pana bhikkhuni unapabcabandhanena pattena abbam navam pattam cetapeyya,

```
比丘尼
                           不足 五
                                        補綴
                                                      缽
                                                              其它
                                                                         新
                            una+ pabca+ bandha
              bhikkhuni
                                                    patta
                                                             abba
                                                                                 patta
                                                                                           cetapeti
ya
                                                                        nava
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.
                          adj.
                                      m.s.Ins.
                                                  m.s.Ins.
                                                           m.s.Acc.
                                                                     m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc.
                                                                                          3s.opt.
```

- 二十四、若比丘尼以不到五個補綴的缽換其它的新缽,
- 24. Should any bhikkhuni with an alms bowl having less than five mends ask for another new bowl,

nissaggiyam pacittiyam.

```
捨 懺 nissaggaiya pacittaika adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

犯捨懺。

it is to be forfeited and confessed.

Taya bhikkhuniya so patto bhikkhuniparisaya nissajjitabbo. Yo ca tassa bhikkhuniparisaya 這 比丘尼 這 缽 比丘尼 大眾 而且 這 比丘尼 放棄 bhikkhuni bhikkhuni + parisa nissajjati bhikkhuni +parisa ta ta patta ta ya ca f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. f. f.s.Dat. grd.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Nom. conj. f.s.Gen. f. f.s.Gen.

這位比丘尼應該捨這個缽給比丘尼(僧)眾。而那比丘尼眾(輾轉遞捨後的)

The bowl is to be forfeited by the bhikkhuni to the company of bhikkhunis.

tassa bhikkhuniya padatabbo, "ayam te bhikkhuni patto. pattapariyanto, so ca 比丘尼 這 最後 此 而且 這 給予 妳的 比丘尼 padati bhikkhuni patta+pariyanta ta ca ta ayam+ te bhikkhuni patta m. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. conj. f.s.Dat. f.s.Dat. grd.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Nom. s.Gen. f.s.Voc. m.s.Nom.

任何最後的缽應該交給這位比丘尼,(並說):「比丘尼!這個是妳的缽,

That company of bhikkhunis' final bowl should be presented to the bhikkhuni, (saying,) "This, bhikkhuni, is your bowl.

yavabhedanaya dharetabbo"ti. Ayam tattha samici.

```
正確
 直到
          破壞
                                               這裡
                                       這
yava+
        bhedana
                    dhareti
                                                          samici
                                       ima
                                               tattha
                  grd.(m.s.Nom.) ind. f.s.Nom.
                                                adv.
adv
         m.s.Dat.
                                                          f.s.Nom.
```

應該保持(用)到壞掉爲止。」在這裡這是正確的(過程)。

It is to be kept until broken." This is the proper course here.

- 25.Bhesajjasikkhapadam 七日藥(儲存最多儲存七天) (=Bhikkhu NP 23)
- 25. Yani kho pana tani gilananam bhikkhuninam patisayaniyani bhesajjani, seyyath'idam:

```
此
                                          比丘尼
                                                                                        正如
                                                                                                   這
                                                        patisayati
                                                                                       seyyatha
                                        bhikkhuni
      kho
            pana
                          gilana
                                                                         bhesajja
                                                                                                  idam
                                                                         m.p.Nom.
                                                     grd.(m.p.Nom.)
            adv. n.p.Nom. n.p.Gen.
                                        f.p.Gen.
n.p.Nom.
                                                                                       adv.
```

- 二十五、有這些生病的比丘尼服用的藥,也就是:
- 25. There are these tonics to be taken by sick bhikkhunis:

navanitam telam madhu phanitam, tani patiggahetva sattahaparamam sappi 酥油 此 蜂蜜 糖漿 七 天 madhu phanita patiggahati satta+aha+parama sappi navanita tela ta n.s.Nom. n.s.Nom. n.s.Nom. n.s.Nom. n.s.Nom. m.p.Acc. n. adj.(m.s.Acc.) ger.

酥油、奶油、油、蜂蜜、糖漿1,接受這些(藥)後,最多儲存七天可以使用。

ghee, fresh butter, oil, honey, sugar/molasses. Having been received, they are to be used from storage seven days at most.

sannidhikarakam paribhubjitabbani. Tam atikkamentiya, nissaggiyam pacittiyam.

儲存 做 使用 這 超過 捨 懺 sannidhi+karaka paribhubjati ta atikkamaya nissaggaiya pacittaika m. m.s.Acc. grd.(m.p.Nom.) m.s.Acc. adj.(f.s.abl.) adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

如果超過這期限,犯捨懺。

Beyond that, they are to be forfeited and confessed.

26.Civara-acchindanasikkhapadam(贈衣後)奪回衣(=Bhikkhu NP 25)

26. Ya pana bhikkhuni bhikkhuniya samam civaram datva kupita anattamana acchindeyya va

任何 比丘尼 比丘尼 自己 衣服 牛氣 高興 bhikkhuni bhikkhuni dadati kupita an+attamana acchindati ya pana samam civara f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Dat. adv. n.s.Acc. ger. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.) 3s.opt.

二十六、若比丘尼贈送自己的衣服給(其他)比丘尼後,憤怒不悦地取回或

26. Should any bhikkhuni — having herself given robe-cloth to (another) bhikkhuni and then being angered and displeased — snatch it away

acchindapeyya va, nissaggiyam pacittiyam.

使取回 或 捨 懺 acchindapeti va nissaggaiya pacittaika 3s.opt. conj. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

叫人取回(衣服)的話,犯捨懺。

or have it snatched away, it is to be forfeited and confessed.

27.Suttavibbattisikkhapadam 乞求紗線(請織工們織成布料) (=Bhikkhu NP 26)

27. Ya pana bhikkhuni samam suttam vibbapetva tantavayehi civaram vayapeyya,

紗線 任何 比丘尼 自己 乞求 織工 布料 bhikkhuni samam vinnapeti tantavaya civara vayapeti ya pana sutta f.s.Nom .adv. f.s.Nom. adv. m.s.Acc. ger. m.p.Ins. n.s.Acc. caus.3s.opt.

二十七、若比丘尼自己乞求紗線,請織工們織成布料的話,

27. Should any bhikkhuni, having requested thread, have robe-cloth woven by weavers,

 $^{^{1}}$ 酥油(sappi乳酪、熟酥)、奶油(navanita生酥)、油(tela茶油)、蜂蜜(madhu)、糖蜜(phanita石蜜)。

nissaggiyam pacittiyam.

捨 懺 nissaggaiya pacittaika adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

犯捨懺。

it is to be forfeited and confessed.

- 28.Mahapesakarasikkhapadam(未受請而請)織工織布(=Bhikkhu NP 27)
- 28. Bhikkhunim pan'eva uddissa abbatako gahapati va gahapatani va tantavayehi 比丘尼 而 強調詞 指定 非親戚 在家男 在家女 或 織工 bhikkhuni uddissati a+batika gahapatani tantavaya pana+eva gahapati f.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. adv. ger. adj.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Nom. m.p.Ins.
- 二十八、爲了特定比丘尼,沒有親戚關係的在家男或女
- 28. In case a man or woman householder unrelated (to the bhikkhuni)

civaram vayapeyya. Tatra cesa bhikkhuni pubbe appavarita tantavaye upasamkamitva 布料 之後 如果 這 比丘尼 之前 不 激請 織工 upa+sam+kamati civara bhikkhuni a+pavareti tatra ce + ta pubba vayapeti tantavaya adv. conj. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adv. pp.(f.s.Nom.) m.p.Acc. ger.

叫織工織布料(給她)。之後,如果這位比丘尼未受邀請就去織工那裡

has robe-cloth woven by weavers for the sake of a bhikkhuni, and if the bhikkhuni, not previously invited (by the householder), having approached the weavers,

civare vikappam apajjeyya, "Idam kho avuso civaram mam uddissa viyati, ayatabca 衣服 考慮 提議 這 朋友 布料 指定 長 civara aham uddissati vivati ayatam + ca civara vikappa apajjati ima kho avuso n.s.Loc. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. n.s.Acc. adv. m.p.Voc. n.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. ger. pass.3s.pr. adj.(n.s.Acc.) conj.

對布料提出建議:「朋友!這布料是特別爲我織的,要織得長一點、

should make stipulations with regard to the cloth, saying, "This cloth, friends, is to be woven for my sake. Make it long,

karotha vitthatabca appitabca suvitabca suppavayitabca suvilekhitabca 做 堅固 和 好好地 織 和 好好地 分散 和 好好地 刮擦 karoti vitthata su+ pavayatam + ca su + vilekhitam + appeti su+vitam + ca2p.imp. adj.(n.s.Acc.) pp.(n.s.Acc.) pp.(n.s.Acc.) conj. pp.(n.s.Acc.) conj. pp.(n.s.Acc.) conj.

寬一點、緊密一點,好好地織,好好地散布,好好地梳理,

make it broad, make it tightly woven, well woven, well spread, well scraped,

suvitacchitab ca karotha;

好好地 使平坦 和 做 su+vitacchitam + ca karoti pp.(m.s.Acc.) conj. 2p.imp.

好好地整平。

well smoothed,

app'eva nama mayam pi ayasmantanam kibcimattam anupadajjeyyama"ti,

或許 我們 也 大德 送禮 api + eva aham pi ayasmant kim+ci+matta anupadajjeyyama + iti nama (adv.) m.p.Nom. ind. m.p.Dat. m.s.Acc. 1.p.opt. n. ind.

或許我們也會送點禮物給大德。」

and perhaps I may reward you with a little something";

evabca sa bhikkhuni vatva kibcimattam anupadajjeyya antamaso pindapatamattam'pi, 這 如此 而 比丘尼 說完 乃至 antamaso evam=ca ta bhikkhuni vatti kim+ci+matta anupadeti pinda+pata+mattam + api conj. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. ger. n. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. m. f.s.Acc. ind.

而這位比丘尼那樣說了後,如果送某些禮物,即使只是托缽的食物」也算,

and should that bhikkhuni, having said that, reward them with a little something, even as much as almsfood,

nissaggiyam pacittiyam.

捨 懺 nissaggaiya pacittaika adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

犯捨懺。

it (the cloth) is to be forfeited and confessed.

- 29.Accekacivarasikkhapadam 急施衣(存放超過做衣服的時間) (=Bhikkhu NP 28)
- 29. Dasahanagatam kattikatemasipunnamam, bhikkhuniya pan'eva accekacivaram 十 日 未 到 月份名 三 月 比丘尼 又 (緊)急 布料 dasa+aha+an+agata kattika+te+masi+punnama bhikkhuni pana + eva acceka+civara m.s.Acc. m.s.Dat. m.s.Acc. adv. adj. n.s.Nom.
- 二十九、未到三個月(的雨安居)的迦提月滿月²的前十天,如果有布料急著(布施)
- 29. Ten days prior to the third-month Kattika full moon, should robe-cloth offered in urgency accrue to a bhikkhuni,

¹ Para.III,260(CS:pg.373): 「**托缽的食物**:粥、飯、蔬果食(硬食)、化妝品、牙籤、織布用的紗線、說法。」

² 迦提:Kattikamasa,【陽】迦底迦月(月份名,於十月至十一月之間,農曆 9 月 16 至 10 月 15)。temasipunnmam(=timasipunnma):第三個月的滿月,農曆 10 月 15。迦提月滿月(kattikapunnamam):10 月 1 至 15 日。

uppajjeyya, accekam mabbamanaya bhikkhuniya patiggahetabbam, patiggahetva

知道,認為 (緊)急 比丘尼 接受 patiggaheti acceka mabbati bhikkhuni uppajjati patiggaheti 3s.opt. adj.(m.s.Acc.) ppr.(f.s.Ins) f.s.Ins. grd.(m.s.Nom.) ger.

給比丘尼的話,當比丘尼知道是急著(布施的布料)時,可以接受。接受後,she is to accept it if she regards it as offered in urgency. Once she has accepted it,

nikkhipitabbam. yava civarakalasamayam Tato ce uttari nikkhipeyya, 存放 直到 衣服 正時 時候 存放 那 如果 超過 civara+kala+samaya nikkhipati nikkhipati yava ta uttari ce adv. m. m.s.Acc. grd.(m.s.Nom.) s.Abl. conj. adv. 3s.opt.

可以存放到適合(做)衣服的時候。如果存放超過那(時限),

she may keep it throughout the robe season. Beyond that,

nissaggiyam pacittiyam. 捨 懺

nissaggaiya pacittaika adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

犯捨懺。

it is to be forfeited and confessed.

- 30.Parinatasikkhapadam 轉移(僧團的物品轉爲己有) (=Bhikkhu NP 30)
 - 30. Ya pana bhikkhuni janam savghikam labham parinatam attano parinameyya, 任何 比丘尼 僧團 獲得物 已被轉移 自己 知道 bhikkhuni ianati savghika labhati parinamati attan parinamati ya pana f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. pp.(m.s.Acc.) m.s.Dat. caus.3s.opt.

nissaggiyam pacittiyam.

捨 懺 nissaggaiya pacittaika adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 三十、若比丘尼明知而轉移供養僧團的物品給自己,犯捨懺。
- 30. Should any bhikkhuni knowingly divert to herself gains that had been allocated for a Community, they are to be forfeited and confessed.

Pattavaggotatiyo.

Uddittha nissaggiya pacittiya dhamma. kho. timsa ayyayo, 二十 規則 誦 大姐 捨 uddisati kho timsa dhamma nissaggiya dhamma m.p.Nom. pp.(m.p.Nom.) adv. m.p.Nom. f.p.Voc. m.p.Nom.

諸大姐!三十捨懺的規則已經誦出了。

The ladies, the Thirty Rules entailing Expiation with Forfeiture have been recited.

Tatthayyayo, pucchami: Kacci'ttha parisuddha?

這裡 諸大姐 我問 是否 於此 清淨 tattha pp. of parisujjhati pucchati ettha kacci adv. f.p.Acc. 1s.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

在這裡我問諸大姐:「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨?」

Herein I ask the ladies: Are you pure in this?

Dutiyam'pi pucchami: Kacci'ttha parisuddha?

第二 也 問 是否 於此 清淨 duttayam + api pucchati kacci ettha pp. of parisujjhati m.s.Acc. ind. ls.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

第二次我再問:「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨?」

For the second times I ask the ladies: Are you pure in this?

Tatiyam'pi pucchami: Kacci'ttha parisuddha?

第三 也 問 是否 於此 清淨 tatiyam + api pucchati kacci ettha pp. of parisujjhati m.s.Acc. ind. 1s.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

第三次再問:「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨?」

For the third times I ask the ladies: Are you pure in this?

Parisuddh'etth'ayyayo, tasma tunhi, evam etam dharayamiti.

清淨 認為 在此 因此 沈默 如此 這 tunhi dharati + ti parisuddha+ettha ta evam eta pp.(m.p.Nom.) adv. f.p.Nom. m.s.Abl. m.s.Acc. adv. adv.

諸大姐於此(類戒)是清淨的,所以默然。我如此認定這件事。

The ladies are pure herein; that is why they are silent. So do I record it.

~Nissaggiyapacittiya nitthita.~

Suddhapacittiya(百六十六波逸提法)

Ime kho pan'ayyayo, chasatthisata pacittiya dhamma uddesam agacchanti.

犯懺悔 這些 規則 又 大姐 百六十六 誦 agacchati uddesati ima kho pana pacittiya dhamma adv. f.p.Voc. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. m.s.Acc. 3p.pr.

諸大姐!現在到了誦出這百六十六懺悔戒。

Now, the ladies, the one hundred sixty-six Rules entailing Expiation come up for recitation.

Lasunavaggopathamo 蒜品第一

*1.Lasunasikkhapadam(吃)蒜

1. Ya pana bhikkhuni lasunam khadeyya pacittiyam.

```
任何 比丘尼 蒜 吃食 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni lasuna khadati paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

- 一、若比丘尼,吃蒜¹者,犯懺悔。
- 1. Should any bhikkhuni eat garlic, it is to be confessed. [Cv.V.34.1]
- *2.Sambadhalomasikkhapadam(剃除)陰毛
- 2. Ya pana bhikkhuni sambadhe lomam samharapeyya, pacittiyam.

```
比丘尼
                          密處、陰部
                                          毛
                                                     剃除
                                                                    犯懺悔
              bhikkhuni
                         sambadha
                                         loma
                                                  samharapeti
                                                                  paccittiya
  ya pana
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.
                      m.n.s.Loc.
                                      n.s.Acc.
                                                caus.3s.opt.
                                                                adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

- 二、若比丘尼,剃除密處毛2者,犯懺悔。
- 2. Should any bhikkhuni have the hair in the "confining places" (armpits and pelvic areas) removed, it is to be confessed. [Cv.V.27.4]
- *3.Talaghatakasikkhapadam 掌摑
- 3. Talaghatake pacittiyam.

```
掌摑 犯懺悔
talaghataka paccittiya
n.s.Loc adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

- 三、以掌打人3者,犯懺悔。
- 3. (Genital) slapping (even to the extent of consenting to a blow with a lotus-leaf) is to be confessed.
- *4.Jatumatthakasikkhapadam(使用)樹膠生支
- 4. Jatumatthake pacittiyam.

紫膠 犯懺悔 jatumatthaka paccittiya n.s.Loc adj.(f.s.Nom.)

四、使用樹膠生支4者,犯懺悔。

4. (The insertion of) a dildo is to be confessed.

¹ Paci.IV,259(CS:pg.340): **Lasunam** nama Magadhakam vuccati.(蒜:摩揭陀國的(蒜)。) Anapatti palanduke, bhabjanake, haritake, capalasune, supasampake, mamsasampake, telasampake, salave, uttaribhavge, ummattikaya, adikammikayati.(不犯:洋蔥(珠蔥, onion;Allium cepa)、打破的、呵梨勒果、奢婆蒜,湯之調料,肉之調料,油之調合物,(加入)伴菜,調味,癡狂者,最初之犯行者。)

² Paci.IV,260(CS:pg.341): **Sambadho** nama ubho upakacchaka, muttakaranam.(**密處**(**陰部**): 兩陰部,性器具。)《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1036.2): 「若比丘尼,剃三處毛者,波逸提。」

³ Paci.IV,261(CS:pg.342): **Talaghatakam** nama samphassam sadiyanti antamaso uppalapattenapi muttakarane paharam deti, apatti pacittiyassa.(掌摑:接受觸(打),乃至以蓮葉擊打。)

⁴ Paci.IV,261(CS:pg.343): **Jatumatthakam** nama jatumayam katthamayam pitthamayam mattikamayam.(樹膠生支(樹膠性具):紫膠製的,木製的,(穀粒等的)麵粉製的,泥製的。) 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1036.2):「若比丘尼,以胡膠作男根,波逸提。」

*5.Udakasuddhikasikkhapadam 以水洗淨(密處)

5.Udakasuddhikam pana bhikkhuniya adiyamanaya dvavgulapabbaparamam adatabbam.

	1	J	,	\mathcal{L}	1		
水 洗淨		比丘尼	抓取	二指	關節	最多	應該拿
力へ わいず			1/11/4/8	— 1H	随日日	収少	心以于
udaka+suddhika		bhikkhun i	adiyati	dve + avgula	ı + pabba	+ parama	adati
n. adj.(f.s.Nom.)	adv.	f.s.Ins.	ppr.(f.s.Ins.)	n.	n	adj.(f.s.Acc.)	pot.

Tam atikkamentiya, pacittiyam.

```
這 超過 犯懺悔
ta atikkamaya pacittiya
m.s.Acc. adj.(f.s.Abl.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

五、諸比丘尼以水洗淨(密處)¹時,最多可入二指節,若過此者,犯懺悔。²

5. When a bhikkhuni is giving herself an ablution, is to be given only to the depth of two finger joints (and using no more than two fingers). Beyond that, it is to be confessed.

*6.Upatitthanasikkhapadam 伺候(作飯的比丘)

6. Ya pana bhikkhuni bhikkhussa bhubjantassa paniyena va vidhupanena va upatittheyya, pacittiyam.

```
任何 比丘尼 比丘 食事 飲料 或 扇 或 伺候 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni bhikkhu < ppr. of bhubjati paniya vidhupana upatitthati< (upa 近+tha 站) paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Gen. n.s.Gen. n.s.Ins. n.s.Ins. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

六、若比丘尼,以飲料或扇伺候吃飯的比丘者,犯懺悔。

6. Should any bhikkhuni, when a bhikkhu is eating, attend on him with water or a fan, it is to be confessed.

*7.Amakadhabbasikkhapadam(乞或令乞)生穀

7. Ya pana bhikkhuni amakadhabbam vibbatva va vibbapetva va bhajjitva va bhajjapetva va

```
或 令乞討
任何
             比丘尼
                       生的 穀粉
                                      乞討
                                                           或 烤、炒
                                                                           令烤、炒
      pana bhikkhuni
                      amaka+dhabba
                                     vibbati
                                                 vibbapeti
                                                               bhajjati
                                                                            bhajjapeti
f.s.Nom. adv.
             f.s.Nom.
                         adj. n.s.Acc.
                                          ger.
                                                   ger.caus.
                                                                 ger.
                                                                             ger.caus.
```

七、若比丘尼,乞或指使乞生穀,炒或指使炒,

7. Should any bhikkhuni, having requested raw grain or having had it requested, having roasted it or having had it roasted,

kottetva va kottapetva va pacitva va pacapetva va bhubjeyya, pacittiyam.

搗、打	或 令搗	或 煮 ュ	或 令煮 或	食	犯懺悔
kotteti	kottapeti	pacitva	pacapetva	bhubjeti	paccittiya
ger.	ger.caus.	ger.	ger.caus.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

捣或指使捣,煮或指使煮而食者,犯懺悔。

having pounded it or having had it pounded, having cooked it or having had it cooked, then eat it, it is to be confessed.

¹ Paci.IV,262(CS:pg.344): **Udakasuddhikam** nama muttakaranassa dhovana vuccati.(以水洗淨:以水洗淨性器官。)

²《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1036.2):「若比丘尼,以水作淨,應齊兩指各一節,若過者,波逸提。」

*8.Pathama-uccarachaddanasikkhapadam 棄大便(等)(1)

8. Ya pana bhikkhuni uccaram va passavam va savkaram va vighasam va tirokutte va

```
大便
                                                  或
            比丘尼
                                       小便
                                                       垃圾
                                                                        剩飯
                                                                                或外牆
           bhikkhuni
ya pana
                        uccara
                                       passava
                                                     savkara
                                                                      vighasa
                                                                                   tiro+kutta
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.
                       m.s.Acc.
                                      m. s.Acc.
                                                      m.s.Acc.
                                                                     m.s.Acc.
                                                                                   m.s.Loc.
```

八、若比丘尼,以大便、或小便、或垃圾、或剩飯,

tiropakare va chaddeyya va chaddapeyya va, pacittiyam.

```
外牆垣 或 棄 或 令棄 犯懺悔
tiro+pakara chaddeti(<chadd) chaddapeti pacittiya
m.s.Loc. 3s.opt caus. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

棄或指使棄於牆外或牆垣外者,犯懺悔。1

8. Should any bhikkhuni toss or get someone else to toss excrement or urine or trash or leftovers over a wall or a fence, it is to be confessed.

*9.Dutiya-uccarachaddanasikkhapadam 棄大便(等)(1)

9. Ya pana bhikkhuni uccaram va passavam va savkaram va vighasam va

任何	比丘尼	大便	或 小便	或 垃圾	或 剩餘飯菜	或
ya pana	bhikkhun i	uccara	passava	savkara	vighasa	
f.s.Nom. a	dv. f.s.Nom.	m.s.Acc.	m. s.Acc.	m.s.Acc.	m.s.Acc.	

harite chaddeyya va chaddapeyya va, pacittiyam.

```
農作物 棄 或 令棄 犯懺悔
harita chaddeti chaddapeti paccittiya
n.s.Loc. 3s.opt caus. 3s.opt adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

- 九、若比丘尼,丢棄小便、或大便、或垃圾、或剩餘飯菜於農作物²上,或指使 棄者,犯懺悔。
- 9. Should any bhikkhuni toss or get someone else to toss excrement or urine or trash or leftovers on living crops, it is to be confessed.
- *10.Naccagitasikkhapadam(往觀聽)舞蹈、唱歌
 - 10. Ya pana bhikkhuni naccam va gitam va vaditam va dassanaya gaccheyya, pacittiyam.

```
任何
             比丘尼
                         舞蹈
                                      歌謠 或
                                                                 觀(聽)
                                                                                          犯懺悔
                                                   演奏
                                                                               去
            bhikkhuni
                                                  vadita
                                                                             gacchati
                                                                                         paccittiya
ya pana
                                                                dassana
                        nacca
                                      gita
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.
                        n.s.Acc.
                                     n.s.Acc.
                                                   n.s.Acc.
                                                                 n.s.Dat.
                                                                             3s.opt.
                                                                                        adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

十、若比丘尼,往觀聽舞蹈、唱歌或演奏³者,犯懺悔。

10. Should any bhikkhuni go to see dancing or singing or instrument-playing, it is to be confessed. [Cv.V.2.6]

¹ Paci.IV,266(CS:pg.348):「不犯: 檢視之後才丟,丟棄於非道路之處,癡狂者,最初之犯行者。」

² Paci.IV,267(CS:pg.349):「農作物(harita):七穀、豆類(等),任何被人類種植使用的、受用的植物。」七穀即:sali 米 (泰國說「小麥」wheat)、 vihi 稻穀、yava 大麥(泰國說'糯米'glutinous rice)、godhuma 小麥(泰國說「野豌豆」tares)、 kavgu 黍(或小米、粟millet or sorghum)、 varaka 豆(泰國說「薏苡仁」Job's tears)、 kudrusa 穀類)。

³ Paci.IV,267(CS:pg.351):「舞蹈:任何舞蹈。唱歌:任何唱歌。演奏:任何演奏。」《增支部》(A.3.103./I,261.):「諸比丘!於聖者之律,唱歌是哭泣。諸比丘!於聖者之律,跳舞是瘋子。」《四分律》卷第五十八(T22.998b):「於聖法律中,歌戲猶如哭,舞如狂者。」《增支部》(A.5.209./III,251.):「諸比丘!拉長歌音而誦(經)法有五種過患。什麼是五?(1)自己即愛著其音;(2)他人也愛著其音;(3)在家眾(聽到)發牢騷:我們這樣唱歌,這些釋迦沙門子也唱歌;(4)修練音調也會妨礙禪定;(5)往後的人會效法所看到的。」

~Lasunavaggo pathamo nitthito.~

Rattandhakaravaggodutiyo 暗夜品第二

*11.Rattandhakarasikkhapadam 暗夜(與男人一對一站著交談)

11. Ya pana bhikkhuni rattandhakare appadipe purisena saddhim

任何 比丘尼 夜 黑暗 少 燈光 男人 和 ya pana bhikkhuni ratta+ andhakara appa+dipe purisa f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. n. m.s.Loc. m.s.Loc. m.s.Ins. adv.

ekeneka santittheyya va sallapeyya va, pacittiyam.

一(男)對一(女) 站著 交談 犯懺悔 ekena + eka santitthati sallapati pacittiya f.s.Ins. 3s.opt. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

十一、若比丘尼,在暗夜無燈中與男人一對一站著交談¹者,犯懺悔。²

- 11. Should any bhikkhuni stand or converse with a man, one on one, in the darkness of the night without a light, it is to be confessed.
- *12.Paticchannokasasikkhapadam 隱密處(與男人一對一站著)交談
- 12. Ya pana bhikkhuni paticchanne okase purisena saddhim

任何 比丘尼 隱密 空間 男人 和 ya pana bhikkhuni <paticchadeti okasa purisa saddhim f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. n.s.Loc. m.s.Loc. m.s.Ins. adv.

ekeneka santittheyya va sallapeyya va, pacittiyam.

一(男)對一(女) 站著 或 交談 或 犯懺悔 ekeneka santitthati sallapati pacittiya f.s.Ins. 3s.opt. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 十二、若比丘尼,在隱密處³與男人一對一站著交談者,犯懺悔。
- 12. Should any bhikkhuni stand or converse with a man, one on one, in a concealed place, it is to be confessed.
- *13.Ajjhokasasallapanasikkhapadam 空地(與男子一對一站著)交談
 - 13. Ya pana bhikkhuni ajihokase purisena saddhim ekeneka santittheyya va sallapeyya va, pacittiyam.

任何 比丘尼 (男)對一(女) 犯懺悔 站著 交談 pana bhikkhuni ajjhokasa purisa ekeneka santitthati sallapati paccittiva f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Loc. m.s.Nom. adj.(f.s.Nom.) f.s.Ins. 3s.opt. 3s.opt.

十三、若比丘尼,在空地與男子一對一站著交談者,犯懺悔。

13. Should any bhikkhuni stand or converse with a man, one on one, in the open air, it is to be confessed.

¹ Paci.IV,269(CS:pg.352): **Sallapeyya va**ti purisassa hatthapase thita sallapati .(交談:與男人在伸手所及之處交談。)

² 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1036.3): 「若比丘尼與男子,共入闇室中者,波逸提。」

³ Paci.IV,269(CS:pg.353): **Paticchanno** nama okaso kuttena va kavatena va kilabjena va sanipakarena va rukkhena va **thambhena va kotthaliya** va yena kenaci paticchanno hoti.(**隱密處**:或圍牆,或窗戶,或草席,或(麻布製的) 屏壁,或樹,或柱子,或粗布袋(sack?),任何這些空間是隱密處。)

*14.Dutiyika-uyyojanasikkhapadam 打發友伴離去

14. Ya pana bhikkhuni rathikaya va byuhe va sivghatake va

任何 比丘尼 車道 死巷 十字路口 ya pana bhikkhuni rathika byuha sivghataka f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Loc. m.s.Loc. m.s.Loc.

purisena saddhim ekeneka santittheyya va sallapeyya va nikannikam va jappeyya

0 010 000	~ ~ ~ ~ ~ ~ ~ ~ ~ ~ ~ ~ ~ ~ ~ ~ ~ ~ ~ ~					
男子	和	一對一	站著	交談	祕密地	耳語
purisa		ekena+eka	santitthati	sallapeyya	nika nn ika	jappeyya
m.s.Ins.	adv.	f.s.Ins.	3s.opt.	3s.opt.	m.s.Nom.	3s.opt.

dutiyikam va bhikkhunim uyyojeyya, pacittiyam.

第二(=友件) 比丘尼 離去 犯懺悔 dutiyika bhikkhuni uyyojeti<uyyubjati pacittiya f.s.Acc. f.s.Acc. caus.3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 一四、若比丘尼,或在街道、或死巷、或十字路口,與男子一對一站著交談,或密談,或打發友伴比丘尼離去¹者,犯懺悔。²
- 14. Should any bhikkhuni along a road, in a cul-de-sac, or at a crossroads stand or converse with a man one on one, or whisper in his ear, or dismiss the bhikkhuni who is her companion, it is to be confessed.
- *15.Anapucchapakkamanasikkhapadam 不告(主人)而離去
- 15. Ya pana bhikkhuni purebhattam kulani upasavkamitva asane nisiditva

任何 比丘尼 食前、午前 俗家 往詣 座位 44 ya pana bhikkhuni purebhatta kula upasavkamati asana nisidati f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. n.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. n.s.Loc. ger. ger.

samike anapuccha pakkameyya, pacittiyam.

主人 不 問 (=未告知) 離去 犯懺悔 samika an+apuccha pakkamati pacittiya m.s.Acc. ger. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 一五、若比丘尼,在食前至俗家坐於座位,不告主人而離去者,犯懺悔。
- 15. Should any bhikkhuni, having gone to family residences before the meal (before noon), having sat down on a seat, depart without taking the owner's leave, it is to be confessed.
- *16.Anapuccha-abhinisidanasikkhapadam 不告(主人)而入座
- 16. Ya pana bhikkhuni pacchabhattam kulani upasavkamitva samike anapuccha

任何 比丘尼 食前、午前 俗家 往詣 主人 不 問 ya pana bhikkhuni purebhatta kula upasavkamati samika an+apuccha f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. n.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. ger. ger.

¹ Paci.IV,271(CS:pg.356): **Dutiyikam va bhikkhunim uyyojeyya**ti anacaram acaritukama dutiyikampi bhikkhunim uyyojeti.(打發第二位比丘尼:打發第二位比丘尼,(為了)做不正當的行爲,不正當之欲。)

² 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1036.3):「若比丘尼入村內與男子在屏處,共立共語,波逸提。」「若比丘尼與男子 共入屏障處者,波逸提。「」若比丘尼入村內巷陌中,遣伴遠去,在屏處與男子共立耳語者,波逸提。」

asane abhinisideyya va abhinipajjeyya va, pacittiyam.

座位 入坐 臥 犯懺悔 asana abhinisidati abhinipajjati pacittiya n.s.Loc. 3s.opt. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

一六、若比丘尼,在食後到俗家,不告主人而坐或臥者,犯懺悔。

16. Should any bhikkhuni, having gone to family residences after the meal (between noon and sunset), sit or lie down on a seat without asking the owner's permission, it is to be confessed.

*17.Anapucchasantharanasikkhapadam 不告(主人)而鋪床座

17. Ya pana bhikkhuni vikale kulani upasavkamitva samike anapuccha

非時 俗家 任何 比丘尼 往詣 主人 ya pana bhikkhuni vikala kula upasavkamati samika an+apuccha f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Loc. n.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. ger. ger.

seyyam santharitva va santharapetva va abhinisideyya va abhinipajjeyya va, pacittiyam.

床、座 令鋪 或 坐 或 臥 犯懺悔 seyya santharati santharapetva abhinis**i**dati abhinipajjati pacittiya adj.(f.s.Nom.) f.s.Acc. ger. caus.ger. 3s.opt. 3s.opt.

- 一七、若比丘尼,在非時¹到俗家,不告主人而鋪床座或指使鋪床座而坐、臥者, 犯懺悔。
- 17. Should any bhikkhuni, having gone to family residences in the wrong time (between sunset and dawn), having spread out bedding or having had it spread out, sit or lie down (there) without asking the owner's permission, it is to be confessed.
- *18.Para-ujjhapanakasikkhapadam(因誤解、誤會而)激怒他人
- 18. Ya pana bhikkhuni duggahitena dupadharitena param ujjhapeyya, pacittiyam.

犯懺悔 任何 比丘尼 錯誤的瞭解 錯誤的理解 他人 激怒 pana bhikkhuni duggahita dupadharita param ujjhapeti paccittiya ya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. n.s.Ins. pp.(n.s.Ins) n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adi.(f.s.Nom.)

- 一八、若比丘尼,因誤解、誤會而激怒他人者,犯懺悔。
- 18. Should any bhikkhuni, because of a misapprehension, because of a misunderstanding, malign another (bhikkhuni), it is to be confessed.
- *19.Para-abhisapanasikkhapadam 咒詛他人
- 19. Ya pana bhikkhuni attanam va param va nirayena va brahmacariyena va abhisapeyya, pacittiyam.

任何 比丘尼 他人 地獄 梵行 咒詛 ya pana bhikkhuni atta abhisapati paccittiya para brahmacariya niraya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. s.Acc. s.Acc. m.s.Ins. n.s.Ins. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 一九、若比丘尼,咒詛自己或他人生地獄、去梵行者,犯懺悔。²
- 19. Should any bhikkhuni curse herself or another (bhikkhuni) with regard to hell or

¹ Paci.IV,166(CS:pg.216):「非時:已過中午,到(隔日)天亮。」

²《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1036.3):「若比丘尼有小因緣事,便咒詛:墮三惡道,不生佛法中!若我有如是事, 墮三惡道,不生佛法中!若汝有如是事,亦墮三惡道,不生佛法中!波逸提。」

the holy life, it is to be confessed.

*20.Rodanasikkhapadam(打自己而)哭泣

20. Ya pana bhikkhuni attanam vadhitva vadhitva rodeyya, pacittiyam.

自己 打、殺、處罰 打、殺 哭泣 犯懺悔 比丘尼 ya pana bhikkhuni vadheti vadheti rodati atta paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(f.s.Nom.) caus.ger. caus.ger. 3s.opt.

- 二〇、若比丘尼,打自己而哭泣者,犯懺悔。
- 20. Should any bhikkhuni weep, beating and beating herself, it is to be confessed.

~Rattandhakaravaggo dutiyo nitthito.~

Naggavaggotatiyo 裸體品第三

- *21.Naggasikkhapadam 裸體(沐浴)
- 21. Ya pana bhikkhuni nagga nahayeyya, pacittiyam.

任何 比丘尼 裸體 沐浴 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni nagga nahayati paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(f.s.Acc.) 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 二一、若比丘尼、裸體沐浴者、犯懺悔。
- 21. Should any bhikkhuni bathe naked, it is to be confessed. [See Mv.VIII.28 & Cv.V.16.2]
- 22.Udakasatikasikkhapadam 沐浴衣(=Bhikkhu P 91)
- 22.Udakasatikam pana bhikkhuniya karayamanaya pamanika karetabba,

水 衣 比丘尼 使製作 按照尺寸 應使作 udaka+satika bhikkhuni kareti pamanika karoti n. adj.(f.s.Nom.) f.s.Acc. caus.ppr.(f.s.Ins.) f.s.Nom. caus.grd.(f.s.Ins.)

tatr'idam pamanam dighaso catasso vidatthiyo Sugatavidatthiya, tiriyam dve vidatthiyo.

那裡 這 量、尺寸 張手 善浙 張手 張手 dighaso tatra+idam pamana catasso vidatthi Sugata + vidatthi tiriyam vidatthivo adv. n.s.Nom. n.s.Nom. m.s.Abl. f.p.Nom. f.p.Nom. f.s.Ins. n.s.Acc. f.p.Nom. f.p.Nom.

Tam atikkamentiya chedanakam pacittiyam.

這 超過 切除 犯懺悔ta atikkamaya chedaka pacittiya m.s.Acc. adj.(f.s.Abl.) m.s.Acc. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 二二、比丘尼作沐浴衣時,應依尺寸作,即依善逝張手¹,長四張手、寬二張手,若超過尺寸者,犯懺悔,應切斷之。²
- 22. When a bhikkhuni is making a bathing cloth, it is to be made to the standard measurement. Here the standard is this: four spans using the Sugata span in length, two spans in width. In excess of that, it is to be cut down and confessed.

 $^{^1}$ 張手(vidatthi):表示張開的大拇指和中指兩端的距離,大概九英吋。善逝一張手(Sugata-vidatthi),等於中等身材的人之張手的三倍。

² 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1037.1):「若比丘尼作浴衣,應量作,應量作者,長佛六磔手,廣二磔手半,若過者波逸提。」

*23.Civarasibbanasikkhapadam(拆解某比丘尼衣之後)縫衣

23. Ya pana bhikkhuni bhikkhuniya civaram visibbetva va visibbapetva va

任何 比丘尼 衣 拆線 或 令拆線 或 比丘尼 ya pana bhikkhuni bhikkhuni civara visibbeti visibbapeti f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. ger. ger.caus.

sa paccha anantarayikini neva sibbeyya,

該尼 之後 無 障難 沒有 縫製 ta paccha an+antarayikini na+eva sibbeyya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adv. 3s.opt.

na sibbapanaya ussukkam kareyya abbatra catuhapabcaha, pacittiyam.

令縫製 努力、熱心 作 別的 四日五 犯懺悔 sibbapanaya ussukka karoti abbatra catu+aha+pabca+aha pacittiya caus.(3s.opt.) adj.(f.s.Nom.) n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adv. n.p.Acc.

- 二三、若比丘尼,拆解或指使拆解某比丘尼的衣之後,若該尼沒有障難,不予縫製,也不請人縫製而盡力,過四五日者,犯懺悔。
- 23. Should any bhikkhuni, having unsewn (another) bhikkhuni's robe or having had it unsewn, and then later when there are no obstructions neither sew it nor make an effort to have it sewn within four or five days, it is to be confessed.
- *24.Savghaticarasikkhapadam(過五日,不)穿僧伽梨
- 24. Ya pana bhikkhuni pabcahikam savghaticaram atikkameyya, pacittiyam.

任何 比丘尼 五日 僧伽梨 動作 超過 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni pabcahika savghati + caram atikkamati paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(f.s.Acc.) adj.(f.s.Acc.) 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 二四、若比丘尼,若不穿僧伽梨,過五日者,犯懺悔。¹
- 24. Should any bhikkhuni exceed her five-day outer robe period, it is to be confessed.
- *25.Civarasavkamaniyasikkhapadam 穿著不能確定之衣
- 25. Ya pana bhikkhuni civarasavkamaniyam dhareyya, pacittiyam.

任何 比丘尼 衣 不能確定 穿著、戴著 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni civara + savkati (savk 懷疑) dhareti paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. n. grd.ppr.(3s.opt.) 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 二五、若比丘尼,穿他人之衣²者,犯懺悔。
- 25. Should any bhikkhuni wear a robe that should be given back (one that she has borrowed from another bhikkhuni without asking her permission), it is to be confessed.

¹ 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1037.1):「若比丘尼過五日,不看僧伽梨,波逸提。」

² Paci.IV,282(CS:pg.371):「他人之衣:已持有五種衣,之外,偷竊他人之衣,或不查問,就穿著或覆蓋,犯罪、 犯懺悔。」

*26.Ganacivarasikkhapadam 妨礙大眾(得衣)

26. Ya pana bhikkhuni ganassa civaralabham antarayam kareyya, pacittiyam.

任何 大眾 妨礙 犯懺悔 比丘尼 衣 ya pana bhikkhuni gana civara + labham antaraya karoti pacittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Gen. adj.(f.s.Acc.) m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 二六、若比丘尼,妨礙大眾得衣者,犯懺悔。1
- 26. Should any bhikkhuni put an obstruction in the way of a group's receiving robe-cloth, it is to be confessed.
- *27.Patibahanasikkhapadam 阻擋(如法分配衣)
- 27. Ya pana bhikkhuni dhammikam civaravibhavgam patibaheyya, pacittiyam.

任何 犯懺悔 比丘尼 如法 衣 分配 dhammika ya pana bhikkhuni civara + vibhavga patibahati paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adi.(m.s.Acc.) adj.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. 3s.opt.

- 二七、若比丘尼,阻擋如法分配衣者,犯懺悔。²
- 27. Should any bhikkhuni block a robe-cloth distribution that is in accordance with the rule, it is to be confessed.
- *28.Civaradanasikkhapadam 贈衣(給無家者等)
- 28. Ya pana bhikkhuni agarikassa va paribbajakassa va paribbajikaya va

任何 比丘尼 無家者 或 遍行者 或 女遍行者 或 ya pana bhikkhuni agarika paribbajaka paribbajika f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Gen. m.s.Gen. f.s.Gen.

samanacivaram dadeyya, pacittiyam.

沙門 衣 給 犯懺悔 samana+civara dadati pacittiya m. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 二八、若比丘尼,贈衣給沙門無家者、遍行者或女遍行者,犯懺悔。
- 28. Should any bhikkhuni give a contemplative robe (a robe that has been marked so as to be allowable for a bhikkhu or bhikkhuni) to a householder, a male wanderer, or female wanderer, it is to be confessed.
- *29.Kala-atikkamanasikkhapadam(期待未確定之衣而)過衣時
- 29. Ya pana bhikkhuni dubbalacivarapaccasaya civarakalasamayam atikkameyya, pacittiyam.

任何 微弱的 衣 期待 時 時間 超渦 犯懺悔 bhikkhun**i** dubbala+civara+paccasaya civara+kala+samaya atikkamati paccittiya pana f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Ins. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj. m. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt.

- 二九、若比丘尼,期待未確定之衣而過衣時者,犯懺悔。
- 29. Should any bhikkhuni let the robe-season (the period for receiving kathinadonations) pass on the basis of a weak expectation for cloth, it is to be confessed.

1 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1037.1):「若比丘尼與眾僧衣,作留難者,波逸提。」

²《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1037.2):「若比丘尼作如是意,眾僧如法分衣,遮令不分,恐弟子不得者,波逸提。」

*30.Kathinuddharasikkhapadam(阻擋如法)取消迦絺那(利益)

30. Ya pana bhikkhuni dhammikam kathinuddharam patibaheyya, pacittiyam.

迦絺那衣 取消(利益) 任何 比丘尼 如法 擋住 犯懺悔 pana bhikkhuni dhammika kathina+ uddhara patibahati paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adi. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

三〇、若比丘尼,阻擋如法取消迦絺那利益者,犯懺悔。

30. Should any bhikkhuni block the dismantling of the kathina privileges in accordance with the rule, it is to be confessed.

~Naggavaggotatiyo nitthito.~

Tuvattavaggocatuttho 分享品第四

*31.Ekamabcatuvattanasikkhapadam(兩人)同睡一床

31. Ya pana bhikkhuniyo dve ekamabce tuvatteyyum, pacittiyam.

任何 比丘尼 二(人) 一 床 分享 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni dve eka + mabce tuvatteti paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Loc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

三一、若比丘尼,若兩人同睡一床者,犯懺悔。1

31. Should two bhikkhunis share a single bed, it is to be confessed. [Cv.V.19.2]

*32.Ekattharanatuvattanasikkhapadam(兩人)同蓋一被

32. Ya pana bhikkhuniyo dve ekattharanapavurana tuvatteyyum, pacittiyam.

任何 比丘尼 二(人) 一 鋪設 毛毯、被褥 分享 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni dve eka + tharana + pavurana tuvatteti paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. n. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

三二、若比丘尼,若兩人同蓋一被者,犯懺悔。

32. Should two bhikkhunis share a single blanket or sleeping mat, it is to be confessed. [Cv.V.19.2]

*33.Aphasukaranasikkhapadam(對比丘尼故意)惱亂

33. Ya pana bhikkhuni bhikkhuniya sabcicca aphasum kareyya, pacittiyam.

任何 比丘尼 比丘尼 故意 不安樂 作 犯懺悔 sabcicca ya pana bhikkhuni bhikkhuni karoti paccittiya aphasu f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. adv. adj.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. 3s.opt.

三三、若比丘尼,對比丘尼故意惱亂者,犯懺悔。

33. Should any bhikkhuni intentionally cause annoyance to (another) bhikkhuni, it is to be confessed.

¹ 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1036.3):「若比丘尼共一蓐,同一被臥,除餘時,波逸提。」

*34.Na-upatthapanasikkhapadam 不伺候(同住之生病比丘尼)

34. Ya pana bhikkhuni dukkhitam sahajivinim neva upatthaheyya,

```
同生活的(比丘尼)
              比丘尼
                           生病的
                                                       不 又
                                                                  伺候
               bhikkhuni
                           dukkhita
                                        sahajivini
                                                                 upatthahati
                                                        neva
 ya
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.
                       adj.(f.s.Acc.)
                                       f.s.Acc.
                                                       3s.opt.
                                                                  ger.
```

na upatthapanaya ussukkam kareyya, pacittiyam.

```
不 令伺候 努力、熱心 作 犯懺悔
na upatthapeti ussukka karoti pacittiya
ger.caus. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

三四、若比丘尼,不伺候又不找人伺候同住¹之生病比丘尼者,犯懺悔。

34. Should any bhikkhuni not attend to her ailing student nor make an effort to have her attended to, it is to be confessed. [See Cv.VIII.12.2]

*35.Nikkaddhanasikkhapadam(給住屋後,瞋怒不喜即)趕走

35. Ya pana bhikkhuni bhikkhuniya upassayam datva kupita anattamana

· ·	1	ш -> 🖂		J 1	/· / —	,, 1	
任何		比丘尼	比丘尼	住所	給了	生氣	不 適意
110	nono	bhikkhun i	bhikkhuni	11000000110		launito	an-attamana
ya	pana	UIIIKKIIUIII	OHIKKIIUIII	upassaya	dadati	kupita	an+attamana
fs No	m adv	f.s.Nom.	f.s.Acc.	m.s.Acc.	ger.	adi (f s No	m.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)
1.5.1 10	III. uu v .	1.5.1 (0111.	1.5.7 100.	111.5.7 100.	501.	uaj.(1.5.1 10)	iii.) aaj.(1.5.1 \0111.)

nikkaddheyya va nikkaddhapeyya va, pacittiyam.

趕走	或	令趕走	或	犯懺悔
nikka dd hati		nikka dd hapeti		pacittiya
3s.opt.		caus.3s.opt.	;	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

三五、若比丘尼,給比丘尼住屋後,瞋怒不喜即趕走或指使趕走者,犯懺悔。

35. Should any bhikkhuni, having given living space to another bhikkhuni, then — angry and displeased — evict her or have her evicted, it is to be confessed.

*36.Samsatthasikkhapadam(與居士)住得親近

36. Ya pana bhikkhuni samsattha vihareyya gahapatina va gahapatiputtena va,

```
親沂
                                                     居士
  任何
                比丘尼
                                          住
                                                                       居士
              bhikkhuni
                          samsattha
                                        viharati
                                                                      gahapati+putta
                                                    gahapati
  ya pana
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.
                        pp.(f.s.Nom.)
                                        3s.opt.
                                                   m.s.Ins.
                                                                           m.s.Ins.
```

三六、若比丘尼,若與居士或居士子住得親近者,

36. Should any bhikkhuni live entangled with a householder or a householder's son,

sa bhikkhuni bhikkhunihi evamassa vacaniya "mayye, samsattha vihari gahapatinapi

		,		,		\mathcal{L}	1	
那 比丘尼 比丘尼	如是	說	勿	大姐	親近	住	居士	及
ya bhikkhuni bhikkhuni	evam + atthi		ma	ayye	samsattha	viharati	gahapati -	⊦ pi
f.s.Nom.f.s.Nom. f.p.Acc.	adv. 3s.opt.	grd.(f.s.Nom.))	f.s.Voc.	pp.	2s.aor.	m.s.Ins.	•

諸比丘尼應對讓比丘尼這樣說:「大姐!勿與居士

the bhikkhunis are to admonish her thus: "Lady, don't live

¹ Paci.IV,291(CS:pg.383): 「同住(同生活): 住在同一尼精舍。」

gahapatiputtenapi, viviccayye, vivekabbeva bhaginiya savgho vanneti"ti.

居士 分離 大姐 遠離 其他 姐妹 gahapati + putta + viviccati ayye viveka+abba+ eva bhagini savgha vanneti ti 2s.pr. f.s.Voc. f.s.Abl. m.s.Nom. m m.s.Ins. m. adj. 3s.pr.

及居士子住得親近。大姐!僧團評判妳離開,遠離其他的姐妹。」

entangled with a householder or a householder's son. Live alone, lady. The Community recommends strict isolation for the lady."

Evabca sa bhikkhuni bhikkhunihi vuccamana tath'eva pagganheyya, 如此 而 這 比丘尼 比丘尼 勸告 如此 仍 努力

ta bhikkhuni bhikkhuni <vucati tatha pagganhati adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) adv. 3s.opt.

而該比丘尼被諸比丘尼這樣勸告時,仍然那樣堅持,

And should that bhikkhuni, thus admonished, persist as before,

sa bhikkhuni bhikkhunihi yavatatiyam samanubhasitabba

這 比丘尼 比丘尼 直到 第三 勸告 sa bhikkhuni bhikkhuni yava +tatiyam samanubhasati f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. adv. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

諸比丘尼應該乃至三次勸告這位比丘尼去放棄那(主張)。

the bhikkhunis are to rebuke her up to three times so as to desist.

yavatatiyam samanubhasitabba tassa patinissaggaya, yavatatiyabce samanubhasiyamana

直到 第三 勸告 它 捨棄 直到 第三 如果 勸 yava +tatiyam samanubhasita ta patinissagga yava +tatiyam +ce samanubhasati adv. grd.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Gen. m.s.Dat. adv. ppr.(f.s.Nom.)

如果到了第三次被勸告時,

If while being rebuked up to three times

tam patinissajjevya, icce'tam kusalam. No ce patinissajjevya, pacittivam.

這(=它) 捨棄 如此 這 善 不 如果 捨棄 犯懺悔ta patinissajjati ta kusala patinissajjati pacittiya m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. n.s.Nom. n.s.Nom. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

(她)放棄它,那就好。如果不捨棄,犯懺悔。

by the bhikkhunis she desists, that is good. If she does not desist, it is to be confessed.

*37.Antoratthasikkhapadam 在國內(有危險,卻不結伴而行)

37. Ya pana bhikkhuni antoratthe sasavkasammate sappatibhaye asatthika carikam careyya, pacittiyam.

任何 比丘尼 國內 她 呈現的 已知 有 恐怖 不 商隊 遊行 行 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni antorattha sa + savkasa+mata sa+patibhaya a+satthika carika carati paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. n.s.Loc. f.s.Nom. adj. pp.(n.s.Loc.) n.s.Loc. adj.(f.s.Acc.) f.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

三七、若比丘尼,若在國內,她知道有危險¹,卻不跟遊走的商隊走者,犯懺悔。

37. Should any bhikkhuni, without joining a caravan of merchants, set out within the

 $^{^{1}}$ Paci.IV,295(CS:pg.388):「**在國內**:在該比丘尼的王國,她的國家。**她知道有危險**:她曾看過在道上有強盜潛藏,(在那裡)吃、住、坐、臥。」

local king's territory on a journey considered dubious and risky, it is to be confessed.

- *38.Tiroratthasikkhapadam 在國外(有危險,卻不結伴而行)
- 38.Ya pana bhikkhuni tiroratthe sasavkasammate sappatibhaye asatthika carikam careyya, pacittiyam. 任何 比丘尼 外國 她 呈現的 已知 有 恐怖 不 商隊 遊行 行 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni tirorattha sa+ savkasa+mata sa+patibhaya a+satthika carika carati paccittiya

f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. n.s.Loc. f.s.Nom. adj. pp.(n.s.Loc.) n.s.Loc. adj.(f.s.Acc.) f.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 三八、若比丘尼,若在國外,她知道有危險,卻不跟遊走的商隊走者,犯懺悔。
- 38. Should any bhikkhuni, without joining a caravan of merchants, set out outside the local king's territory on a journey considered dubious and risky, it is to be confessed.
- *39.Antovassasikkhapadam 於雨期中遊行
- 39. Ya pana bhikkhuni antovassam carikam careyya, pacittiyam.

任何 比丘尼 內 雨季 遊行 行 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni anto+vassa carika careyya paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. f.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 三九、若比丘尼,若於雨期中1遊行者,犯懺悔。2
- 39. Should any bhikkhuni set out on a journey during the Rains-residence, it is to be confessed. [Mv.III.3.2]
- *40.Carikanapakkamanasikkhapadam(雨安居後,)不出遊行
- 40. Ya pana bhikkhuni vassamvuttha carikam na pakkameyya

任何 比丘尼 雨 下雨 遊行 不 走開 ya pana bhikkhuni vassa+<vassati carika pakkamati f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m. pp.(f.s.Acc.) f.s.Acc. 3s.opt.

antamaso chappabcayojananipi, pacittiyam.

乃至 六 五 由旬 也 犯懺悔 cha+pabca+yojana + pi paccittiya adv. n.s.Acc. ind. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

四〇、若比丘尼,雨安居結束³後,若不出去遊走五六由旬,犯懺悔。

40. Should any bhikkhuni, having completed the Rains-residence, not depart on a journey of at least five or six leagues, it is to be confessed.

~Tuvattavaggo catuttho nitthito.~

¹ Paci.IV,297(CS:pg.389): 「雨期中:前三個月,或後三個月沒有安居。」

²《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1037.1):「若比丘尼春夏冬一切時人間遊行,除餘因緣者,波逸提。」

³ Paci.IV,297(CS:pg.391): 「雨安居結束:前三個月,或後三個月雨安居結束。」

Cittagaravaggopabcamo 畫室品第五

- *41.Rajagarasikkhapadam 參觀王宮(等)
- 41. Ya pana bhikkhuni rajagaram va cittagaram va aramam va

任何 比丘尼 王 宮 或 繪畫堂 或 公園 或 ya pana bhikkhuni raja+agara citta+ agara arama f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m. n.s.Acc. n. n.s.Acc. m.s.Acc.

uyyanam va pokkharanim va dassanaya gaccheyya, pacittiyam.

園林 或 蓮池 或 觀看 去 犯懺悔 uyyana pokkharani dassana gacchati pacittiya n.s.Acc. f.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

四一、若比丘尼,若去參觀王宮、或畫室、或公園、或園林、或蓮池者,犯懺悔。

- 41. Should any bhikkhuni go to see a royal pleasure house or a picture gallery (any building decorated for amusement) or a park or a pleasure grove or a lotus pond, it is to be confessed.
- *42.Asandiparibhubjanasikkhapadam 享用長椅(等)
- 42. Ya pana bhikkhuni asandim va pallavkam va paribhubjeyya, pacittiyam.

任何 比丘尼 長椅 或 裝飾尾毛的床 或 享用 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni asandi pallavka paribhubjati paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

四二、若比丘尼,享用長椅¹或裝飾尾毛的床²者,犯懺悔。

- 42. Should any bhikkhuni make use of a dais or a throne, it is to be confessed. [Cv.VI.8]
- *43.Suttakantanasikkhapadam 紡紗
- 43. Ya pana bhikkhuni suttam kanteyya, pacittiyam.

任何 比丘尼 紗、線 編織 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni sutta kantati paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. m.s.Nom.

四三、若比丘尼,若紡紗者,犯懺悔。

- 43. Should any bhikkhuni spin yarn (thread), it is to be confessed.
- *44.Gihiveyyavaccasikkhapadam 爲在家人作事
- 44. Ya pana bhikkhuni gihiveyyavaccam kareyya, pacittiyam.

任何 比丘尼 在家 作事、服務 作 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni gihi + veyyavacca karoti paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

四四、若比丘尼,爲在家人作事,犯懺悔。

44. Should any bhikkhuni do a chore for a lay person, it is to be confessed.

¹ Paci.IV,299 (CS:pg.393):**Asandi** nama atikkantappamana vuccati.(長椅:超大尺寸的椅子。)

² Paci.IV,299 (CS:pg.393): **Pallavko** nama aharimehi valehi kato hoti.(裝飾尾毛的床:綺麗的、裝飾尾毛的(床)。)

*45.Adhikaranasikkhapadam 平息(諍事)

45. Ya pana bhikkhuni bhikkhuniya "ehayye, imam adhikaranam vupasamehi"ti vuccamana

比丘尼 比丘尼 來 大姐 這 諍事 滅、平息 bhikkhuni ima adhikarana bhikkhuni ayye vupasameti + <vucati ya pana f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. imp. of eti f.s. Voc. n.s. Acc. n.s. Acc. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) f.s.Acc. 2s.imp.

"sadhu"ti patissunitva sa paccha anantarayikini neva vupasameyya,

好、妥善 該尼 之後 障難 允諾 沒有 平息 paccha an+antarayikini na+ eva vupasameti sadhu ti patissunati ta f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. 3s.opt. ger. adv. 3s.opt.

na vupasamaya ussukkam kareyya, pacittiyam.

平息 努力、熱心 作 犯懺悔 vupasama ussukka karoti pacittiya m.s.Ins. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

四五、若比丘尼,受比丘尼之請託:「大姐!請來息諍。」(應諾:)「好!」而 後沒有障難,卻沒有去平息,也不盡力行事者,犯懺悔。

45. Should any bhikkhuni — when told by a bhikkhuni, "Come, lady. Help settle this issue," and having answered, "Very well" — then, when there are no obstructions, neither settle it nor make an effort to have it settled, it is to be confessed.

46.Bhojanadanasikkhapadam(親手)給食(=Bhikkhu P 41)

46. Ya pana bhikkhuni agarikassa va paribbajakassa va paribbajikaya va sahattha

任何 比丘尼 無家者 男遍行者 女遍行者 或自手 ya pana bhikkhuni agarika sa+hattha paribbajaka paribbajika f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(n.s.Dat.) m.s.Dat. f.s.Dat. m.s.Ins.

khadaniyam va bhojaniyam va dadeyya, pacittiyam.

硬食 或 軟食 或 給予 犯懺悔 khadaniya bhojaniya dadati pacittiya n.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

四六、若比丘尼,親手送硬食、軟食給無家者、或男遍行者、女遍行者,犯懺悔。

46. Should any bhikkhuni give, with her own hand, staple or non-staple food to a householder, a male wanderer, or a female wanderer, it is to be confessed. [See Bhikkhus' Pacittiya 41]

*47.Avasathacivarasikkhapadam 月華衣(繼續使用)

47. Ya pana bhikkhuni avasathacivaram anissajjetva paribhubjeyya, pacittiyam.

任何 比丘尼 衣(=月華衣) 不 放棄 使用 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni avasatha + civara a + < nissaiati paribhubiati paccittiva f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. n.s.Acc m.s.Nom. m 3s.opt. ger.

四七、若比丘尼,不丢掉月華衣1而(繼續)使用者,犯懺悔。

47. Should any bhikkhuni use a menstrual cloth without having forfeited it (after her previous period), it is to be confessed.

¹ Paci.IV,303 (CS:pg.399): **Avasathacivaram** nama "Utuniyo bhikkhuniyo paribhubjantu"ti dinnam hoti.(**月華衣**(**月經布**):提供比丘尼月經使用的(布)。)《善見律毘婆沙》卷第六:「月華者,月生水華,此是血名。」(T24.713.1)

*48.Avasathaviharasikkhapadam 不捨住處(而出遊)

48. Ya pana bhikkhuni avasatham anissajjitva carikam pakkameyya, pacittiyam.

不 放棄 任何 比丘尼 住處 遊行 ya pana bhikkhuni avasatha a+ < nissajati carika pakkamati paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. ger. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

四八、若比丘尼,若不捨住處而出遊者,犯懺悔。

- 48. Should any bhikkhuni depart on a journey without having forfeited her dwelling space, it is to be confessed. [See Bhikkhus' Pacittiya 15]
- *49.Tiracchanavijjapariyapunanasikkhapadam 遍學畜生咒
- 49. Ya pana bhikkhuni tiracchanavijjam pariyapuneyya, pacittiyam.

任何 比丘尼 畜生 明咒、技藝 徹底地學習 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni tiracchana + vijja pariyapunati paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m. f.s.Nom. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

四九、若比丘尼, 遍學畜生咒 者, 犯懺悔。2

- 49. Should any bhikkhuni study lowly arts (literally, bestial knowledge), it is to be confessed. [Cv.V.33.2 for a list of lowly arts, see DN 2]
- *50.Tiracchanavijjavacanasikkhapadam 教畜生咒
- 50. Ya pana bhikkhuni tiracchanavijjam vaceyya, pacittiyam.

任何 比丘尼 畜生 明咒、技藝 教讀 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni tiracchana + vijja vaceti paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m. f.s.Nom. caus.3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

五〇、若比丘尼,教畜生咒,犯懺悔。

50. Should any bhikkhuni teach lowly arts, it is to be confessed. [Cv.V.33.2]

~ Cittagaravaggo pabcamo nitthito. ~

Aramavaggochattho 僧園品第六

- *51.Aramapavisanasikkhapadam(未經同意而)進入比丘僧園
- 51. Ya pana bhikkhuni janam sabhikkhukam aramam anapuccha paviseyya, pacittiyam.

比丘尼 明知 有 僧園 不問 進入 犯懺悔 比丘 ya pana bhikkhuni jana sa+bhikkhuka arama anapuccha pavisati paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. adj.(m.s.Acc.) m.s.Acc. adv. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

五一、若比丘尼,明知有比丘之僧園,未經同意而進入者,犯懺悔。

51. Should any bhikkhuni, without asking permission, knowingly enter a monastery containing a bhikkhu, it is to be confessed. [See Bhikkhus' Pacittiya 23]

¹ Paci.IV,305 (CS:pg.401): **Tiracchanavijja** nama yam kibci bahirakam anatthasamhitam.(**畜生學**(咒): 任何外道無利益的(學問)。)

²《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1037.2):「若比丘尼誦習世浴咒術者,波逸提。_「

*52.Bhikkhu-akkosanasikkhapadam 辱罵比丘

52. Ya pana bhikkhuni bhikkhum akkoseyya va paribhaseyya va, pacittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	比丘	辱駡	或	責駡	或	犯懺悔	
ya pana	bhikkhun i	bhikkhu	akkosati		paribhasati		paccittiya	
f.s.Nom. adv.	. f.s.Nom.	m.s.Acc.	3s.opt.		3s.opt.		adj.(f.s.Nom.))

五二、若比丘尼,辱罵或責備比丘者,犯懺悔。

52. Should any bhikkhuni revile or insult a bhikkhu, it is to be confessed.*

*53.Ganaparibhasanasikkhapadam 責罵大眾

53. Ya pana bhikkhuni candikata ganam paribhaseyya, pacittiyam.

```
任何 比丘尼 瞋的 大眾 責罵 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni candikata gana paribhasati paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. m.s.Nom.
```

五三、若含瞋的比丘尼,責罵大眾者,犯懺悔。

53. Should any bhikkhuni, in a fit of temper, revile a group (the Bhikkhuni Community), it is to be confessed.

*54.Pavaritasikkhapadam 已受邀請

54. Ya pana bhikkhuni nimantita va pavarita va khadaniyam va bhojaniyam va

1			1		2		3	
任何	比丘尼	受請	或 已邀請	或	硬食	或	軟食	或
ya pana	bhikkhun i	nimanteti	pavareti		khadaniya		bhojaniya	
f.s.Nom. ad	v. f.s.Nom.	pp.(f.s.Nom.)	pp.(f.s.Nom.)		n.s.Acc.		n.s.Acc.	

khadeyya va bhubjeyya va, pacittiyam.

```
咀嚼 或 食 或 犯懺悔
khadati bhubjeyya pacittiya
3s.opt. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

五四、若已受請的比丘尼,已吃飽,卻又嚼食或噉食者,犯懺悔。

54. Should any bhikkhuni, having eaten and turned down an offer (of further food), chew or consume staple or non-staple food (elsewhere), it is to be confessed. [See Bhikkhus' Pacittiya 35]

*55.Kulamaccharinisikkhapadam 慳俗家

55. Ya pana bhikkhuni kulamaccharini assa, pacittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	俗家	慳	有	犯懺悔
ya pana	bhikkhuni	kula +	maccharini	atthi	paccittiya
f.s.Nom. adv.	f.s.Nom.	n.	f.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

五五、若比丘尼,慳俗家¹者,犯懺悔。

_

¹ Paci.IV,312(CS:pg.411): **Kulam** nama cattari kulani-- khattiyakulam, brahmanakulam, vessakulam, suddakulam.(俗家:四種俗家—刹帝利俗家、婆羅門眾俗家、吠舍俗家、首陀羅俗家。) **Maccharini** assati "Katham bhikkhuniyo nagaccheyyun"ti bhikkhuninam santike kulassa avannam bhasati, apatti pacittiyassa. Kulassa va santike bhikkhuninam avannam bhasati, apatti pacittiyassa.(慳俗家:"比丘尼如何不應去",諸比丘尼靠近說不名譽(誹謗)的俗家,犯懺悔。或諸比丘尼靠近俗家說不名譽,犯懺悔。) 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1038.1): 「若比丘尼於家生嫉妒心,波逸提。」

- 55. Should any bhikkhuni be stingy with regard to families (supporters), it is to be confessed.
- *56.Abhikkhukavasasikkhapadam 無比丘住處(入安居)
- 56. Ya pana bhikkhuni abhikkhuke avase vassam vaseyya, pacittiyam.

```
任何
           比丘尼
                         無比丘
                                     住處
                                                      入安居
                                                                    犯懺悔
           bhikkhuni
                        a+bhikkhuka
                                                                   paccittiya
ya pana
                                      avasa
                                               vassa
                                                        vasati
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.
                                                                 adj.(f.s.Nom.)
                       adj.(m.s.Loc.) m.s.Loc.
                                              m.s.Acc. 3s.opt.
```

五六、若比丘尼,在無比丘之住處入安居者,犯懺悔。

- 56. Should any bhikkhuni spend the Rains-residence in a dwelling where there are no bhikkhus (nearby), it is to be confessed.*
- *57.Apavaranasikkhapadam(於二部僧中)未行自恣
- 57. Ya pana bhikkhuni vassamvuttha ubhatosavghe tihi thanehi na pavareyya ditthena va

```
任何
              比丘尼
                                 下雨
                                             二部
                                                                           不 自恣
              bhikkhuni
                                                                                        dittha<pp. of passati
  ya pana
                           vassa+<vassati
                                           ubhato + savgha
                                                                  thana
                                                                             pavareti
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.
                           m. pp.(f.s.Acc.)
                                                                                        pp.(f.s.Ins.)
                                                  m.s.Loc.
                                                                  n.s.Loc.
                                                                               ger.
```

sutena va parisavkaya va, pacittiyam.

```
聽 或 疑 或 犯懺悔
suta parisavka pacittiya
pp.(f.s.Ins.) pp.(f.s.Ins.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

万七、若比丘尼,安居結束,未於二部僧中依見、聞、疑等三事行自恣者,犯懺悔。

- 57. Should any bhikkhuni, having completed the Rains-residence, not invite (criticism) from both Communities with regard to three matters what they have seen, heard, or suspected (her of doing) it is to be confessed.*
- *58.Ovadasikkhapadam(不爲)教誡或共住而往
- 58. Ya pana bhikkhuni ovadaya va samvasaya va na gaccheyya, pacittiyam.

```
任何
             比丘尼
                           教誡
                                        共住
                                                   或不
                                                             去
                                                                         犯懺悔
  ya pana
             bhikkhuni
                          ovada
                                        samvasa
                                                            gacchati
                                                                        paccittiya
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.
                         m.s.Ins.
                                                                       adj.(f.s.Nom.)
                                        m.s.Ins.
                                                            3s.opt.
```

五八、若比丘尼,不爲教誡 或共住而往者,犯懺悔。

- 58. Should any bhikkhuni not go for the exhortation or for the (meeting that defines) affiliation (i.e., the Uposatha), it is to be confessed.*
- *59.Ovadupasavkamanasikkhapadam(應於比丘僧)問布薩及求教誡
- 59. Anvaddhamasam bhikkhuniya bhikkhusavghato dve dhamma paccasisitabba

半個月一次	比丘尼	比E	僧團	$\vec{=}$	法	期待、需求
anvaddhamasa	bhikkhuni	bhikk	khu+savgha	dve	dhamma	paccasimsati
adv.	f.p.Nom.	m.	m.s.Abl.		m.p.Acc.	grd.

¹ Paci.IV,315(CS:pg.414): **Ovado** nama attha garudhamma.(**教誡**:八敬法。)

uposathapucchakabca ovadupasavkamanabca. Tam atikkamentiya pacittiyam.

發問者 教誡 及 這 招渦 uposatha+pucchaka + ca ovada+upasavkamana + atikkamaya pacittiva ta n.s.Acc. adj.(f.s.Abl.) m.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. adj.(n.s.Nom.) m. m.

五九、比丘尼於每半月應於比丘僧求二法,即問布薩及求教誡¹,違此者,犯懺悔。

- 59. Every half-month a bhikkhuni should request two things from the Bhikkhu Community: the asking of the date of the Uposatha and the approaching for exhortation. In excess of that (half-month), it is to be confessed.*
- *60.Pasakhejatasikkhapadam 肢節生癰瘡(單獨給男子作醫療)
- 60. Ya pana bhikkhuni pasakhe jatam gandam va rudhitam va anapaloketva savgham va

```
任何
               比丘尼
                           肢節
                                      生
                                                       或
                                                             瘡
              bhikkhuni
                                             ganda
  ya pana
                         pasakha
                                   jata
                                                            rudhita
                                                                          an+apaloketi
                                                                                            savgha
f.s.Nom. adv.
              f.s.Nom.
                         m.s.Loc. pp.(m.s.Acc.) m.s.Acc.
                                                            n.s.Acc.
                                                                                ger.
                                                                                           m.s.Acc.
```

ganam va purisena saddhim ekeneka bhedapeyya va phalapeyya va dhovapeyya va

大眾	或 男人	一起		離開	或 破開	或	洗	或
gana	purisa		ekena+eka	bhedapeti	phalapeti		dhovapeti	
m.s.Ins.	m.s.Ins.	adv.	f.s.Ins.	caus.3s.opt.	caus.3s.opt.		caus.3s.opt.	

alimpapeyya va bandhapeyya va mocapeyya va, pacittiyam.

塗	或	縛	或	解開	或	犯懺悔
alimpapeti	baı	ndhapeti	m	ocapeti		pacittiya
caus.3s.opt.	ca	ius.3s.opt.	c	aus.3s.opt.	a	dj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 六〇、若比丘尼,在肢節生癰瘡,不敬僧團或大眾,單獨與男子一對一,或分開、 或破開、或洗、或塗、或縛、或解者,犯懺悔。
- 60. Should any bhikkhuni, without having informed a Community or a group (of bhikkhunis), alone with a man have a boil or scar that has appeared on the lower part of her body (between the navel and the knees) burst or cut open or cleaned or smeared with a salve or bandaged or unbandaged, it is to be confessed.

~Aramavaggo chattho nitthito.~

Gabbhinivaggo sattamo 孕婦品第七

- *61.Gabbhinisikkhapadam 令孕婦(受具戒)
- 61. Ya pana bhikkhuni gabbhinim vutthapeyya, pacittiyam.

任何 比丘尼 孕婦 使受具戒 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni gabbhini vutthapeti paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. caus.3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

六一、若比丘尼, 使孕婦受具戒者, 犯懺悔。

61. Should any bhikkhuni sponsor (the Acceptance (*upasampada*) of) a pregnant woman, it is to be confessed.

¹ Paci.IV,315(CS:pg.415): **Ovado** nama attha garudhamma. "Uposathampi na pucchissami ovadampi na yacissami"ti dhuram nikkhittamatte apatti pacittiyassa. (教誡:八敬法。"我將不問布薩,我將不求教誡",於擱置職責,犯懺悔。)

*62.Payantisikkhapadam 令有幼兒之婦女(受具戒)

62. Ya pana bhikkhuni payantim vutthapeyya, pacittiyam.

任何 比丘尼 有幼兒之婦女 使受具戒 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni payanti vutthapeti paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. caus.3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

六二、若比丘尼,使有幼兒之婦女1受具戒者,犯懺悔。

- 62. Should any bhikkhuni sponsor (the Acceptance of) a woman who is still nursing, it is to be confessed
- *63.Pathamasikkhamanasikkhapadam(令未二年學六法戒之)式叉摩那受具戒(1)
- 63. Ya pana bhikkhuni dve vassani chasu dhammesu asikkhitasikkham

```
任何 比丘尼 二 年 六 法 未 學習 學 ya pana bhikkhuni dve vassa cha dhamma a+sikkhita+sikkha f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. n.p.Loc. pp. f.s.Acc.
```

sikkhamanam vutthapeyya, pacittiyam.

式叉摩那 使受具戒 犯懺悔 sikkhamana vutthapeti paccittiya f.s.Acc. caus.3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

六三、若比丘尼,使未二年學六法戒之式叉摩那受具戒者,犯懺悔。

- 63. Should any bhikkhuni sponsor (the Acceptance of) a trainee who has not trained for two years in the six precepts, it is to be confessed.*
- *64.Dutiyasikkhamanasikkhapadam(未得許可令二年學六法戒之)式叉摩那受具戒(1)
- 64. Ya pana bhikkhuni dve vassani chasu dhammesu sikkhitasikkham sikkhamanam

```
比丘尼
                               年
                                                            學習
                                                                      學
                                                                                  式叉摩那
                                                  法
  ya pana bhikkhuni
                                                            sikkhita + sikkha
                        dve
                               vassa
                                         cha
                                                 dhamma
                                                                                 sikkhamana
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.
                              m.s.Acc.
                                                n.p.Loc.
                                                                     f.s.Acc.
                                                                                 f.s.Acc.
                                                             pp.
```

savghena asammatam vutthapeyya, pacittiyam.

僧團 未 批准 使受具戒 犯懺悔 savgha a + sammata vutthapeti paccittiya m.s.Ins. pp.(m.s.Acc.) 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

六四、若比丘尼,未得僧團之許可而使於二年學六法戒的式叉摩那受具戒者,犯 懺悔。

64. Should any bhikkhuni sponsor (the Acceptance of) a trainee who has not trained for two years in the six precepts and who has not been authorized by a Community, it is to be confessed.

¹ Paci.IV,318(CS:pg.418): **Payanti** nama mata va hoti dhati va.(有幼兒之婦女:(有幼兒之)母親,或養母。)

*65.Pathamagihigatasikkhapadam 有性行為的女人受具戒者(1)

65. Ya pana bhikkhuni unadvadasavassam gihigatam vutthapeyya, pacittiyam.

任何 比丘尼 不足 二十 歲 有性行爲(的女人) 使受具戒 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni una+dvadasa+vassa gihigata vutthapeti paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. f.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

六五、若比丘尼,使未滿二十歲之有性行爲的女人¹受具戒者,犯懺悔。

65. Should any bhikkhuni sponsor (the Acceptance of) a married woman who (has been married) less than twelve years, it is to be confessed. [See Bhikkhus' Pacittiya 65]

*66.Dutiyagihigatasikkhapadam 有性行為的女人受具戒者(2)

66. Ya pana bhikkhuni paripunnadvadasavassam gihigatam dve vassani chasu dhammesu

任何 比丘尼 二十 有性行爲的女人 二 歲 ya pana bhikkhuni paripunna+dvadasa+vassa gihigata dve vassa cha dhamma f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. n.p.Loc. pp. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc.

asikkhitasikkham vutthapeyya, pacittiyam.

未 學習 學 使受具戒 犯懺悔 a+sikkhita+sikkha vutthapeti pacittiya pp. f.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

六六、若比丘尼, 使滿二十歲之有性行爲的女人, 未於二年學六法戒而受具戒者, 犯懺悔。

66. Should any bhikkhuni sponsor (the Acceptance of) a married woman who (has been married) fully twelve years but who has not trained for two years in the six precepts, it is to be confessed. *

*67.Tatiyagihigatasikkhapadam 有性行為的女人受具戒者(3)

67. Ya pana bhikkhuni paripunnadvadasavassam gihigatam dve vassani chasu dhammesu

任何 比丘尼 滿 二十 有性行爲的女人 二 年 六 法 bhikkhuni paripunna+dvadasa+vassa gihigata dve cha dhamma ya pana vassa f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. n.p.Loc.

sikkhitasikkham savghena asammatam vutthapeyya, pacittiyam.

學習 學 僧團 未 批准 使受具戒 犯懺悔 sikkhita + sikkha savgha a + sammata vutthapeti paccittiya pp. f.s.Acc. m.s.Ins. pp.(m.s.Acc.) 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

六七、若比丘尼,未得僧團之許可而使滿二十歲之有性行為的女人,已於二年學 六法戒者,犯懺悔。

67. Should any bhikkhuni sponsor (the Acceptance of) a married woman who (has been married) fully twelve years and who has trained for two years in the six precepts but who has not been authorized by a Community, it is to be confessed.

¹ Paci.IV,322(CS:pg.422): **Gihigata** nama purisantaragata vuccati.(有性行為的女人: 男人到內室的女人。) PED page 469: 'antaragata' touched by a man (lit. gone in by . . .), a woman who has sexual intercourse, a woman in intercourse with a man.(到內室的女人: 被男人無摸,有性行為的女人,跟男人有性行為的女人。)

*68.Pathamasahajivinisikkhapadam 不教護弟子(1)

68. Ya pana bhikkhuni sahajivinim vutthapetva dve vassani neva anugganheyya

同住者(=弟子) 使受具戒 任何 比丘尼 年 督導、隨握持 不 ya pana bhikkhuni sahajivini vutthapeti dve vassa na+eva anugganhati f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. 3s.opt. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt.

na anugganhapeyya, pacittiyam.

不 令督導 犯懺悔 anugganhapeti pacittiya 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

六八、若比丘尼,使弟子¹受具戒後,兩年不督導又不指派督導者,犯懺悔。

68. Should any bhikkhuni, having sponsored (the Acceptance of) her student, neither assist her (in her training) nor have her assisted for (the next) two years, it is to be confessed. [See Cv.VIII.12.2-11]

*69.Pavattininanubandhanasikkhapadam 不隨(師)學

69. Ya pana bhikkhuni vutthapitam pavattinim dve vassani nanubandheyya, pacittiyam.

執行 二 任何 比丘尼 已使受具戒 年 不 跟隨 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni vutthapita pavattini dve vassa na+anubandhati paccittiva f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. pp.(m.s.Acc.) f.s.Acc. adj.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. 3s.opt.

六九、若比丘尼,受具戒後,兩年不隨(師)學者,犯懺悔。

69. Should any bhikkhuni not attend to her preceptor for two years, it is to be confessed. [See Cv.VIII.11.2-18]

*70.Dutiyasahajivinisikkhapadam 不教護弟子(2)

70. Ya pana bhikkhuni sahajivinim vutthapetva neva vupakaseyya na vupakasapeyya

同住者(=弟子) 使受具戒 比丘尼 不 遠離 令遠離 任何 bhikkhuni sahajivini vutthapeti na+eva vupakaseti vupakasapeti ya pana f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. caus.ger. 3s.opt. caus.3s.opt.

antamaso chappabcayojananipi, pacittiyam.

万至 五 六 由旬 犯懺悔 antamaso cha+pabca+yojanani + pi pacittiya adv. f.s.Nom. ind. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

七十、若比丘尼,使弟子受具戒後,不應遠離或不應指派她遠離五六由旬者,(否則)犯懺悔。

70. Should any bhikkhuni, having sponsored (the Acceptance of) her student, neither take her away nor have her taken away for at least five or six leagues, it is to be confessed.

~Gabbhinivaggo sattamo nitthito.~

¹ Paci.IV,291(CS:pg.383): **Sahajivini** nama saddhiviharini vuccati.(同住者(弟子):同居之女。)

Kumaribhutavaggoatthamo 童女品第八

- 71.Pathamakumaribhutasikkhapadam 童女受具戒者(1) (=Bhikkhuni P 65)
 - 71. Ya pana bhikkhuni unavisativassam kumaribhutam vutthapeyya, pacittiyam.

```
使受具戒
任何
           比丘尼
                      不足 二十
                                             童女
                                                                            犯懺悔
ya pana bhikkhuni
                      una+visati+vassa
                                          kumari+bhuta
                                                            vutthapeti
                                                                           paccittiya
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.
                             m.s.Acc.
                                                f.s.Acc
                                                           caus.3s.opt.
                                                                         adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

七一、若比丘尼,使未滿二十歲1之童女受具戒者,犯懺悔。

- 71. Should any bhikkhuni sponsor (the Acceptance of) a maiden (unmarried woman/female novice) less than twenty years old, it is to be confessed. [Bhikkhus' Pacittiya 65]
- *72.Dutiyakumaribhutasikkhapadam 童女受具戒者(2)
- 72. Ya pana bhikkhuni paripunnavisativassam kumaribhutam dve vassani chasu dhammesu

```
任何
            比丘尼
                                      二十
                                                     童女
                                                                           年
                                                                                     六
                                                                                               法
            bhikkhuni
                         paripunna + visati + vassa
                                                    kumari+bhuta
                                                                      dve
                                                                                     cha
                                                                                             dhamma
ya pana
                                                                            vassa
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.
                                                     f.
                                                           f.s.Acc.
                                                                                            n.p.Loc.
                           pp.
                                          m.s.Acc.
                                                                        m.s.Acc.
```

asikkhitasikkham vutthapeyya, pacittiyam.

```
未 學習 學 使受具戒 犯懺悔
a+sikkhita + sikkha vutthapeti paccittiya
pp. f.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

- 七二、若比丘尼,使滿二十歲之童女未於二年學六法戒而受具戒者,犯懺悔。
- 72. Should any bhikkhuni sponsor (the Acceptance of) a maiden fully twenty years old but who has not trained for two years in the six precepts, it is to be confessed.
- *73.Tatiyakumaribhutasikkhapadam 童女受具戒者(3)
- 73. Ya pana bhikkhuni paripunnavisativassam kumaribhutam dve vassani chasu dhammesu

```
任何
                                                                      年
                                                                                          法
            比丘尼
                                                 童女
                                                                                六
                       paripunna+visati+vassa
                                               kumari+bhuta
                                                                                        dhamma
ya pana bhikkhuni
                                                                dve
                                                                                cha
                                                                       vassa
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.
                                                    f. f.s.Acc.
                                       m.s.Acc.
                                                                      m.s.Acc.
                                                                                         n.p.Loc.
                           pp.
```

sikkhitasikkham savghena asammatam vutthapeyya, pacittiyam.

學習 學 僧團 未 批准 使受具戒 犯懺悔 sikkhita + sikkha savgha a + sammata vutthapeti paccittiya pp. f.s.Acc. m.s.Ins. pp.(m.s.Acc.) caus.3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 七三、若比丘尼,未得僧團之許可而使滿二十歲之童女於二年學六法戒者受具 戒,犯懺悔。
- 73. Should any bhikkhuni sponsor (the Acceptance of) a maiden fully twenty years old who has trained for two years in the six precepts but who has not been authorized by a Community, it is to be confessed.

¹ 未滿二十歲的人: Vin.Mv.I,76(CS:pg.109):「未滿二十歲的人不堪忍耐寒、熱、飢、渴、虻(damsa)、蚊(makasa)、風(vata =kucchivata-pitthivatadivasa受胃腸風、背部風等的支配)、熱(atapo= suriyatapo太陽熱)、爬蟲類(sarisapa 蛇、蠍等)所咬,(不堪忍耐)差勁的話、不好聽的話,身體不持久受苦、猛、粗、利、不悅、不可意而奪命。」

- *74.Unadvadasavassasikkhapadam 未滿十二夏(令人受具戒)
- 74. Ya pana bhikkhuni unadvadasavassa vutthapeyya, pacittiyam.

```
任何 比丘尼 未滿 十二 歲 使受具戒 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni una+dvadasa+vassa vutthapeti paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.p.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

七四、若比丘尼、未滿十二夏而使人受具戒者、犯懺悔。

- 74. Should any bhikkhuni sponsor (an Acceptance) when she has less than twelve years (seniority), it is to be confessed. [See Mv.I.25.6]
- *75.Paripunnadvadasavassasikkhapadam 滿十二夏(令人受具戒)
- 75. Ya pana bhikkhuni paripunnadvadasavassa savghena asammata vutthapeyya, pacittiyam.

```
任何 比丘尼 滿 十二 歲 僧團 未 批准 使受具戒 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni paripunna+dvadasa+vassa savgha a + sammata vutthapeti paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. pp. f.p.Acc. m.s.Ins. pp.(m.s.Acc.) caus.3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

七五、若比丘尼,滿十二夏,未得僧團之許可而使人受具戒者,犯懺悔。

- 75. Should any bhikkhuni, even if she has fully twelve years (seniority) sponsor (an Acceptance) when she has not been authorized by a Community (of bhikkhunis), it is to be confessed.
- *76.Khiyyanadhammasikkhapadam 事後抱怨
- 76. Ya pana bhikkhuni "alam tava te, ayye, vutthapitena"ti vuccamana "sadhu"ti patissunitva 任何 比丘尼 夠了這她們(=妳)大姐 所授具戒 勸告 妥善、是 允諾 ya pana bhikkhuni alam ta+eva ta vutthapeti ti <vucati sadhu ti patissunati f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adv. p.Nom. f.s.Voc. caus.(s.Ins.) ppr.(f.s.Nom.) adv. ger.
 - sa paccha khiyyanadhammam apajjeyya, pacittiyam.

```
她 之後 責備 法 發生 犯懺悔ta khiyyana + dhamma apajjati pacittiya f.s.Nom. adv. n. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

- 七六、若比丘尼,被勸告:「大姐!妳所授具戒已充足。」而應諾:「是!」事後 卻抱怨者,犯懺悔。
- 76. Should any bhikkhuni having been told, "Enough, lady, of your sponsoring (Acceptance) for the time being," and having answered, "Very well" later complain, it is to be confessed
- *77.Pathamasikkhamananavutthapanasikkhapadam 不使式叉摩那受具戒(1)
- 77. Ya pana bhikkhuni sikkhamanam "sace me tvam, ayye, civaram dassasi,

```
任何
              比丘尼
                            式叉摩那
                                            如果 我 妳
                                                                    衣
              bhikkhuni
                            sikkhamana
                                                                             dadati
 ya pana
                                               aham
                                                                  civara
                                              s.Dat. 2s.Nom. f.s.Voc. m.s.Acc.
              f.s.Nom.
f.s.Nom. adv.
                             f.s.Acc.
                                         adv.
                                                                              2s fut
```

evaham tam vutthapessami"ti vatva sa paccha anantarayikini

妣 障難 使受具戒 說完 該尼 之後 eva + aham vutthapeti an+antarayikini ta vatti ta 1s.Nom. f.s.Acc. 1s.fut.caus. ger. f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.

neva vutthapeyya, na vutthapanaya ussukkam kareyya, pacittiyam.

使受真戒 不 不 受具戒 努力 na+eva vutthapeti vutthapana ussukka karoti pacittiya caus.3s.opt. f.s.Ins. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 七七、若比丘尼,對式叉摩那說:「大姐!如果妳給我衣,我讓妳受具戒。」該 尼往後無障難而不使她受具戒,又不指派幫她受具戒而盡力者,犯懺悔。
- 77. Should any bhikkhuni having said to a trainee, "If you give me a robe, I will sponsor you (for Acceptance)," then, when there are no obstructions, neither sponsor her (Acceptance) nor make an effort to have her sponsored (for Acceptance), it is to be confessed.
- *78.Dutiyasikkhamananavutthapanasikkhapadam 不使式叉摩那受具戒(2)
- 78. Ya pana bhikkhuni sikkhamanam "sace mam tvam, ayye, dve vassani anubandhissasi,

式叉摩那 如果 我 妳 大姐 任何 比丘尼 跟隨 bhikkhuni sikkhamana aham anu-bandhati ya pana vassa f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. adv. s.Acc. f.s.Voc. m.s.Acc. 2s fut

evaham vutthapessami"ti vatva sa paccha anantarayikini neva vutthapeyya, tam 這(=妳) 使受具戒 說完 該尼 之後 障難 使受具戒 我 vutthapeti an+antarayikini na+eva vutthapeti eva+aham f.s.Nom. adv. ta vatti f.s.Acc. s.Acc. 1s.fut.caus. 3s.opt. f.s.Nom. 3s.opt. ger.

na vutthapanaya ussukkam kareyya, pacittiyam.

不 受具戒 努力 作 犯懺悔 vutthapana ussukka karoti pacittiya f.s.Ins. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 七八、若比丘尼,對式叉摩那言:「友!汝若二年隨我學者,我使汝受具戒。」 其後彼尼無障難而不使她受具戒,又不指派幫她受具戒而盡力者,犯懺悔。
- 78. Should any bhikkhuni having said to a trainee, "If you attend to me for two years, I will sponsor you (for Acceptance)," then, when there are no obstructions, neither sponsor her (Acceptance) nor make an effort to have her sponsored (for Acceptance), it is to be confessed.
- *79.Sokavasasikkhapadam 陷入幽怨(的式叉摩那使受具戒)
- 79. Ya pana bhikkhuni purisasamsattham kumarakasamsattham candim sokavasam

任何 比丘尼 男子 親近 童子 親沂 充滿感情 住 ya pana bhikkhuni purisa + samsattha kumaraka+ samsattha candi soka + avasa f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m. pp. m. f.s.Acc. adj. m.s.Acc. pp.

sikkhamanam vutthapeyya, pacittiyam.

式叉摩那 使受具戒 犯懺悔 sikkhamana vutthapeti pacittiya f.s.Acc. caus.(3s.opt.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

七九、若比丘尼, 跟男子及年輕人交往而打情罵俏, 陷入幽怨的式叉摩那受具戒者, 犯懺悔。¹

- 79. Should any bhikkhuni sponsor (the Acceptance of) a trainee who is entangled with men, entangled with youths, temperamental, a cause of grief, it is to be confessed.
- *80.Ananubbatasikkhapadam(令父母及丈夫)未聽許(之式叉摩那受具戒)
- 80. Ya pana bhikkhuni matapituhi va samikena va

任何 比丘尼 父母 及 丈夫 或 ya pana bhikkhuni matapitar samika f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.p.Ins. m.s.Ins.

ananubbatam sikkhamanam vutthapeyya, pacittiyam.

未 聽許、許可 式叉摩那 受具戒者 犯懺悔 an + anubbatam sikkhamana vutthapeti paccittiya pp.(f.s.Acc.) f.s.Acc. caus.(3s.opt.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

八十、若比丘尼,使父母及丈夫未聽許之式叉摩那受具戒者,犯懺悔。

- 80. Should any bhikkhuni sponsor (the Acceptance of) a trainee without getting permission from her parents or her husband, it is to be confessed. [See Mv.I.54.6]
- *81.Parivasikasikkhapadam 由別住者(承諾式叉摩那受具戒)
- 81. Ya pana bhikkhuni parivasikachandadanena sikkhamanam vutthapeyya, pacittiyam.

式叉摩那 使受具戒 比丘尼 別住者 給承諾 ya pana bhikkhuni parivasika chandadana sikkhamana vutthapeti paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f caus.(3s.opt.) adj.(f.s.Nom.) s.Acc. f.s.Acc.

八一、若比丘尼,欲由別住者承諾使式叉摩那受具戒者,犯懺悔。

- 81. Should any bhikkhuni sponsor (the Acceptance of) a trainee by means of stale giving of consent, it is to be confessed.
- *82.Anuvassasikkhapadam 年年(使受具戒)
- 82. Ya pana bhikkhuni anuvassam vutthapeyya, pacittiyam.

任何 比丘尼 年年 使受具戒 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni anuvassam vutthapeti paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. caus.(3s.opt.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

八二、若比丘尼,年年使人受具戒者,犯懺悔。

82. Should any bhikkhuni sponsor (Acceptances — act as a preceptor) in consecutive years, it is to be confessed.

¹《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1037.3):「若比丘尼,知女人與童男、男子相敬愛愁憂瞋恚女人,度令出家授具足戒者, 波逸提。」

*83.Ekavassasikkhapadam 一年(度兩人受具戒)

83. Ya pana bhikkhuni ekam vassam dve vutthapeyya, pacittiyam.

```
任何 比丘尼 一 年 二 使人受具戒者 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni eka vassa dve vutthapeti paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. caus.(3s.opt.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

八三、若比丘尼,一年度兩人受具戒者,犯懺悔。

83. Should any bhikkhuni sponsor (Acceptances — act as a preceptor for) two (trainees) in one year, it is to be confessed.

~Kumaribhutavaggo atthamo nitthito.~

Chattupahanavaggonavamo 持傘著履品第九

- *84.Chattupahanasikkhapadam 持傘著履
- 84. Ya pana bhikkhuni agilana chattupahanam dhareyya, pacittiyam.

```
任何 比丘尼 無病 傘 履 拿著、穿著 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni a+gilana chatta+ upahana dhareti paccittiya f.s.Nom. ady. f.s.Nom. adj.(f.s.Nom.) n n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

八四、若比丘尼,無病而持蓋著履者,犯懺悔。

- 84. Should any bhikkhuni, not being ill, use a sunshade and leather footwear (outside a monastery), it is to be confessed. [Sunshade: Cv.V.23.3; Footwear: See Mv.I.30, Mv.V.4.3, Mv.V.5.2]
- *85.Yanasikkhapadam 乘車
- 85. Ya pana bhikkhuni agilana yanena yayeyya, pacittiyam.

```
任何 比丘尼 無病 交通工具 乘(車) 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni a+gilana yana yati paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(f.s.Nom.) n.s.Ins. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

八五、若比丘尼,無病乘車者,犯懺悔。

- 85. Should any bhikkhuni, not being ill, ride in a vehicle, it is to be confessed. [Mv.V.10.2]
- *86.Savghanisikkhapadam 纏腰布
- 86. Ya pana bhikkhuni savghanim dhareyya, pacittiyam.

```
任何 比丘尼 腰布 纏、穿 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni savghani dhareti paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

八六、若比丘尼,纏腰布者,犯懺悔。

86. Should any bhikkhuni wear a hip ornament, it is to be confessed. [Cv.V.2.1]

*87.Itthalavkarasikkhapadam 穿戴婦女裝飾物

87. Ya pana bhikkhuni itthalavkaram dhareyya, pacittiyam.

```
任何 比丘尼 婦女 裝飾物 穿戴 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni itthi+ alavkara dhareti paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

八七、若比丘尼、穿戴婦女裝飾物者、犯懺悔。

- 87. Should any bhikkhuni wear a woman's ornament, it is to be confessed. [See Cv.V.2.1]
- *88.Gandhavannakasikkhapadam 塗香、施粉
- 88. Ya pana bhikkhuni gandhavannakena nahayeyya, pacittiyam.

```
任何 比丘尼 香 脂粉 塗、沐浴 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni gandha + vannaka nahayati paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

八八、若比丘尼,若塗香、施脂粉¹者,犯懺悔。

- 88. Should any bhikkhuni (not being ill) bathe with perfumes and paint, it is to be confessed. [See Mv.VI.9.2 and Cv.V.2.5]
- *89.Vasitakasikkhapadam 塗香粉、油粉
- 89. Ya pana bhikkhuni vasitakena pibbakena nahayeyya, pacittiyam.

```
任何
           比丘尼
                        香粉
                                   含油種子的麵粉
                                                     塗、沐浴
                                                                 犯懺悔
ya pana bhikkhuni
                       vasitaka
                                    pibbaka
                                                    nahayati
                                                                 pacittiya
                      n.s.Ins.
                                                     3s.opt.
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.
                                     n.s.Ins.
                                                                f.s.Nom.
```

八九、若比丘尼,以香粉、油粉塗於身者,犯懺悔。2

- 89. Should any bhikkhuni (not being ill) bathe with scented sesame powder, it is to be confessed. [See Mv.VI.9.2]
- *90.Bhikkhuni-ummaddapanasikkhapadam 使比丘尼揉(或按摩)
- 90. Ya pana bhikkhuni bhikkhuniya ummaddapeyya va parimaddapeyya va, pacittiyam.

-		•	1 1 1 1	_	1 0 0	
任何	比丘尼	比丘尼	使揉	或	使按摩	或 犯懺悔
ya pana	bhikkhun i	bhikkhun i	ummaddapeti		parimaddapeti	paccittiya
f.s.Nom. a	dv. f.s.Nom.	f.s.Acc.	caus.3s.opt.		caus.3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

九〇、若比丘尼,使比丘尼揉或按摩者,犯懺悔。

90. Should any bhikkhuni (not being ill) have another bhikkhuni rub or massage her, it is to be confessed.

¹ Paci.IV,341(CS:pg.456): **Gandho** nama yo koci gandho. **Vannakam** nama yam kibci vannakam. **Nahayeyya**ti nahayati. Payoge dukkatam, nahanapariyosane apatti pacittiyassa.((香:任何香。脂粉:任何脂粉。塗:塗抹。施用者,犯惡作(突吉羅),塗抹全身者,犯懺悔(波逸提)。)

² 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1038.1):「若比丘尼以胡麻滓,塗摩身者,波逸提。」

- *91.Sikkhamana-ummaddapanasikkhapadam 使式叉摩那揉(或按摩)
- 91. Ya pana bhikkhuni sikkhamanaya ummaddapeyya va parimaddapeyya va, pacittiyam.

```
任何 比丘尼 式叉摩那 使揉 或 使按摩 或 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni sikkhamana ummaddapeti parimaddapeti paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. caus.3s.opt. caus.3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

- 九一、若比丘尼,使式叉摩那揉或按摩者,犯懺悔。
- 91. Should any bhikkhuni (not being ill) have a trainee rub or massage her, it is to be confessed.
- *92.Samaneri-ummaddapanasikkhapadam 使沙彌尼揉(或按摩)
- 92. Ya pana bhikkhuni samaneriya ummaddapeyya va parimaddapeyya va, pacittiyam.

```
任何
            比丘尼
                        沙彌尼
                                         使揉
                                                         或
                                                                 使按摩
                                                                                      犯懺悔
          bhikkhuni
                                                                                      paccittiya
ya pana
                        samaneri
                                       ummaddapeti
                                                               parimaddapeti
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.
                        f.s.Acc.
                                                                caus.(3s.opt.)
                                                                                     adj.(f.s.Nom.)
                                      caus.(3s.opt.)
```

- 九二、若比丘尼,使沙彌尼揉或按摩者,犯懺悔。
- 92. Should any bhikkhuni (not being ill) have a female novice rub or massage her, it is to be confessed.
- *93.Gihini-ummaddapanasikkhapadam 使白衣女揉(或按摩)
- 93. Ya pana bhikkhuni gihiniya ummaddapeyya va parimaddapeyya va, pacittiyam.

```
任何 比丘尼 白衣女 使揉 或 使按摩 或 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni gihini ummaddapeti parimaddapeti paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. caus.(3s.opt.) caus.(3s.opt.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

- 九三、若比丘尼,使在家女揉或按摩者,犯懺悔。
- 93. Should any bhikkhuni (not being ill) have a woman householder rub or massage her, it is to be confessed.
- *94.Anapucchasikkhapadam(於比丘前)不問而坐
- 94. Ya pana bhikkhuni bhikkhussa purato anapuccha asane nisideyya, pacittiyam.

```
任何
           比丘尼
                        比丘的
                                      面前
                                               不問
                                                          华位
                                                                               犯懺悔
va pana bhikkhuni
                        bhikkhu
                                     purato
                                             anapuccha
                                                          asana
                                                                   nisideyya
                                                                               paccittiya
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.
                         m.s.Gen.
                                     adv.
                                              adv.
                                                                               adj.(f.s.Nom.)
                                                          n.s.Loc.
                                                                     3s.opt.
```

- 九四、若比丘尼,在比丘前,不問而坐於床座者,犯懺悔。
- 94. Should any bhikkhuni sit down in front of a bhikkhu without asking permission, it is to be confessed.*
- *95.Pabhapucchanasikkhapadam(未得許可而)問比丘
- 95. Ya pana bhikkhuni anokasakatam bhikkhum pabham puccheyya, pacittiyam.

```
未 許可
                                                       問、質詢
                                                                             犯懺悔
任何
           比丘尼
                                            比丘
                                                                   質問
ya pana bhikkhuni
                       an + okasakata
                                          bhikkhu
                                                       pabha
                                                                 pucchati
                                                                             paccittiya
f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.
                            m.s.Acc.
                                         m.s.Acc.
                                                       s.Acc.
                                                                  3s.opt.
                                                                             adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

九五、若比丘尼,未得許可而問比丘者,犯懺悔。

- 95. Should any bhikkhuni ask a question (about the Suttas, Vinaya, or Abhidhamma) of a bhikkhu who has not given leave, it is to be confessed.*
- *96.Asamkaccikasikkhapadam 不著僧祇支(入村)
- 96. Ya pana bhikkhuni asamkaccika gamam paviseyya, pacittiyam.

任何 比丘尼 不著僧祇支(衣) 村 進入 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni a+samkaccika gama pavisati paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

九六、若比丘尼,不著僧祗支1而入村者,犯懺悔。

96. Should any bhikkhuni enter a village without her vest, it is to be confessed.

~Chattupahanavaggo navamo nitthito.~

Musavadavaggodasamo 妄語品第十

- ²97.Musavadasikkhapadam妄語(=Bhikkhu P 1)
 - 97. Sampajanamusavade pacittiyam.

知道 故意 虛妄 說 犯懺悔 sampajana+musa+vada pacittiya adj. m.s.Loc. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

九七、故意說謊,犯懺悔。

- 97. A deliberate lie is to be confessed.
- 98.Omasavadasikkhapadam 辱罵(=Bhikkhu P 2)
- 98. Omasavade pacittiyam.

侮辱 說 犯懺悔 omasavada pacittiya m.s.Loc. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

九八、辱罵,犯懺悔。

- 98. An insult is to be confessed.
- 99.Pesubbasikkhapadam 誹謗(=Bhikkhu P 3)
 - 99. Bhikkhunipesubbe pacittiyam.

比丘尼 誹謗 犯懺悔 bhikkhuni + pesubba paccittiya f. n.s.Loc. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

九九、誹謗3比丘尼,犯懺悔。

99. Malicious tale-bearing among bhikkhunis is to be confessed.

¹ Paci.IV,345(CS:pg.462): **Savkaccikam** nama adhakkhakam ubbhanabhi, tassa paticchadanatthaya.(**僧祇支**:鎖骨以上、膝蓋以下之覆蓋衣。)Anapatti acchinnacivarikaya, natthacivarikaya, gilanaya, assatiya, ajanantiya, apadasu, ummattikaya, adikammikayati. (不犯:失衣、衣被燒、生病、無念、無知、發生事故時,癡狂者,最初之犯行者。) ² 97~166(同比丘波逸提法中之共通戒 70 條。)

³ Paci.IV,12. (CS:pg.20) : 「誹謗:有兩種情況:討好別人、有挑撥的意圖。」集錄十種誹謗情況:(由)名字、種姓、工作、手藝、疾病、特徵(或男性性器官)、染、犯罪、責備。

100.Padasodhammasikkhapadam 逐句地(一起誦讀法) (=Bhikkhu P 4)

100. Ya pana bhikkhuni anupasampannam padaso dhammam vaceyya, pacittiyam. 任何 比丘尼 未 受具足戒者 句 誦讀 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhu an+upasampanna pada dhamma vaceti paccittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. m.s.Abl. m.s.Acc. caus.3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 一〇〇、若比丘尼帶領未受具足戒的人逐句地(一起)誦讀法,犯懺悔。
- 100. Should any bhikkhuni have an unordained person recite Dhamma line by line (with her), it is to be confessed.
- 101.Pathamasahaseyyasikkhapadam(與未受具足戒)同床睡覺(1) (=Bhikkhu P 5)
 - 101. Ya pana bhikkhuni anupasampannaya uttaridvirattatirattam sahaseyyam kappeyya, pacittiyam. 任何 比丘尼 未 受具足戒者 超過 二夜 三夜 同床 睡覺 合適、準備 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni an+upasampanna uttari+dvi+ratta+ti+ratta saha+seyya kappeti pacittiya f.s.Acc. f.s.Nom.adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Ins. adv. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.) n. n.s.Acc.
 - 一〇一、若比丘尼與未受具足戒的人一起睡覺,超過兩、三夜的話,犯懺悔。
 - 101. Should any bhikkhuni lie down together (in the same dwelling) with an unordained woman for more than two or three consecutive nights, it is to be confessed.
- 102.Dutiyasahaseyyasikkhapadam(與男人)同床睡覺(2) (=Bhikkhu P 6)
- 102. Ya pana bhikkhuni purisena sahaseyyam kappeyya, pacittiyam.

任何 比丘尼 男人 同 宿 睡覺 合滴 犯懺悔 va pana bhikkhuni purisa saha+sevva kappeti pacittiva f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Ins. f.s.Acc. adj.(f.s.Nom.) 3s.opt.

- 一〇二、若比丘尼與男人一起睡覺,犯懺悔。
- 102. Should any bhikkhuni lie down together (in the same dwelling) with a man, it is to be confessed.
- 103.Dhammadesanasikkhapadam 說法(超過五六句) (=Bhikkhu P 7)
- 103. Ya pana bhikkhuni purisassa uttarichappabcavacahi dhammam deseyya

任何 比丘尼 男人 超渦 六 開示 Ħ. bhikkhuni purisa uttari+cha+pabca+vaca dhamma disati ya pana f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Dat. adv. m.p.Ins. m.s.Acc. caus.3s.opt.

abbatra vibbuna itthiviggahena, pacittiyan.

除了 有知 女子 身體 犯懺悔 abbatra vibbu itthi + viggaha pacittiya adv. adj.(m.s.Ins.) f. m.s.Ins. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 一〇三、任何比丘對男人說法超過五六句,除了能理解的女子在場,犯懺悔。
- 103. Should any bhikkhuni teach more than five or six sentences of Dhamma to a man, unless a knowledgeable woman is present, it is to be confessed.

104.Bhutarocanasikkhapadam 愛真實(告訴未受具者證得上人法) (=Bhikkhu P 8)

104. Ya pana bhikkhuni anupasampannaya uttarimanussadhammam aroceyya,

任何 比丘尼	未 受具足戒者	超越 人 法	告訴
ya pana bhikkhun i	an+upasampanna	uttari+manussa+dhamma	aroceti
m.s.Nom. adv. m.s.Nom.	m.s.Dat.	adj. m. m.s.Acc.	3s.opt.

bhutasmim pacittiyam.

真實 犯懺悔 bhavati pacittiya pp.(m.s.Loc.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 一○四、任何比丘告訴未受具足戒的人(證得)上人法,即使是真的,犯懺悔。
- 104. Should any bhikkhuni report (her own) superior human state to an unordained person, when it is factual, it is to be confessed.
- 105.Dutthullarocanasikkhapadam(告訴未受具比丘尼的)重罪(=Bhikkhu P 9)
 - 106. Ya pana bhikkhuni bhikkhuniya dutthullam apattim anupasampannassa aroceyya

任何	比丘尼	比丘尼	下流的、粗惡	的 犯罪	未 受具足戒者	告訴
ya pana	bhikkhun i	bhikkhun i	dutthulla	apatti	an+upasampanna	aroceti
f.s.Nom. adv.	f.s.Nom.	f.s.Gen.	m.s.Acc.	f.s.Acc.	m.s.Dat.	3s.opt.

abbatra bhikkhunisammutiya, pacittiyam.

除了 比丘尼 同意 犯懺悔 abbatra bhikkhuni+sammuti pacittiya adv. f. f.s.Abl. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 一〇五、若比丘尼向未受具足戒的人說(某)比丘尼的粗惡罪¹,除了比丘尼(僧團) 同意外,犯懺悔。
- 105. Should any bhikkhuni report (another) bhikkhuni's serious offense to an unordained person unless authorized by the bhikkhunis it is to be confessed.
- 106.Pathavikhananasikkhapadam 挖掘土地(=Bhikkhu P 10)
- 106. Ya pana bhikkhuni pathavim khaneyya va khanapeyya va, pacittiyam.

比丘尼 叫人挖掘 土地 挖掘 或 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni pathavi paccittiva khanati khanapeti va va f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. 3s.opt. caus.3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.) conj. conj.

- 一○六、若比丘尼挖掘或叫人挖掘土地,犯懺悔。
- 106. Should any bhikkhuni dig soil or have it dug, it is to be confessed.

~Musavadavaggo dasamo nitthito.~

.

¹ 粗惡罪(dutthulla):犯八驅擯,及十七僧殘。(cf. Paci.IV,128; CS:pg.168)

Bhutagamavaggoekadasamo 植物品第十一

- 107.Bhutagamasikkhapadam(砍伐)植物(=Bhikkhu P 11)
- 107. Bhutagamapatabyataya pacittiyam.

植物 砍伐 犯懺悔 bhutagama + patabyata pacittiya m. f.s.Loc. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- ─○七、砍伐植物犯懺悔。¹
- 107. The damaging of a living plant is to be confessed.
- 108.Abbavadakasikkhapadam 轉移其它話題(顧左右而言他) (=Bhikkhu P 12)
- 108. Abbavadake vihesake, pacittiyam. 其他 言論 惱亂 犯懺悔 abba + vadaka vihesaka pacittiya m.s.Loc. adj.(m.s.Loc.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)
- 一○八、轉移其它話題,或(以沈默來)惱亂,犯懺悔²。
- 108. Evasive speech and causing frustration are to be confessed.
- 109.Ujjhapanakasikkhapadam(公開)指責(=Bhikkhu P 13)
- 109. Ujjhapanake khiyyanake, pacittiyam.

指責 批評,瞋嫌 犯懺悔 ujjhayati khiyati pacittiya m.s.Loc. m.s.Loc. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 一〇九、如果(公開)指責,或(私下)批評(僧職人員)³,犯懺悔。
- 109. Complaining about or criticizing (a Community official) is to be confessed.
- 110.Pathamasenasanasikkhapadam 臥具(不收就離開)(一) (=Bhikkhu P 14)
- 110. Ya pana bhikkhuni savghikam mabcam bhisim pitham va va va 比丘尼 僧團的 長板凳 或 床墊 或 任何 床 或 bhikkhuni savghika mabca bhisi pana va pitha va va f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. f.s.Acc. conj. conj. conj.

¹ 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1035.1):「若比丘尼壞鬼神村者,波逸提。」Paci.IV,33(CS:pg.50):「不犯:『知這(草木)、給這(草木)、運來這(草木)、這(草木)有用途、作淨這(草木)。』無意圖、無知、無意圖致死者、癡狂者,最初之犯行者。」

² Paci.IV,37(CS:pg.55):「回答其它話題:在僧伽事當中,犯罪的詢問,不欲討論,不盡力於此,而顧左右而言他(,說):誰犯罪?犯什麼罪?在什麼地方犯罪?什麼是犯罪?妳對誰說?妳說什麼?」這是回答其它話題。」

Vihesako nama savghamajjhe vatthusmim va apattiya va anuyubjiyamano tam na kathetukamo tam na ugghatetukamo tunhibhuto savgham viheseti.(惱亂:在僧伽事當中,犯罪的詢問,不欲討論,不盡力於此,沈默不答來惱亂。)

³ Paci.IV,38(CS:pg.57):僧團所選已受具足戒的人,擔任分配房舍、指定請吃飯者、食物、雜貨等職務。有關僧團執事,詳細請見《小品》第六〈住所犍度〉,其中共列舉了十一種僧團執事:(1)分配食物。(2)分配房舍。(3)管理倉庫。(4)接受衣服。(5)分配衣服。(6)分配粥。(7)分配水果。(8)分配飯。(9)分配雜物。(10)分配布。(11)管理清潔工人。

```
koccham va
               ajjhokase santharitva va santharapetva va,
 坐墊、籐椅 或
                 露天
                         舖設
                                   或
                                        使人舖設
                ajjhokasa
 koccha
                         santharati
                                   va
                                        santharapeti
                                                    va
          va
 n.s.Acc.
                 m.s.Loc.
                                         caus.ger.
                                                    conj.
         conj.
                           ger.
                                   conj.
   一○、若比丘尼在空地上舖(曬)或叫人舖(曬)僧團的床、長板凳、床墊、坐墊,
110. Should any bhikkhuni set a bed, bench, mattress, or stool belonging to the
Community out in the open — or have it set out —
tam pakkamanto n'eva uddhareyya na uddharapeyya anapuccham va gaccheyya, pacittiyam.
                                  使人收
              不 強調詞
                        收拾
                              不
                                             未請求
                                                        或
                                                        va
```

它 去 犯懺悔 pakkamati pacittiva ta na + eva uddharati na uddharapeti an+apuccha gacchati m.s.Acc. ppr.(m.s.Nom.) adv. 3s.opt. adv. caus.3s.opt. ger.(m.s.Acc.) conj. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.) 她離開那(用具)時,既未(自己)收也沒有叫人收或未請(人代收),便走了,犯懺悔。

and then on departing neither put it away nor have it put away, or should she go without taking leave, it is to be confessed.

- 111.Dutiyasenasanasikkhapadam 臥具(不收就離開)(二) (=Bhikkhu P 15)
- 111. Ya pana bhikkhuni savghike vihare seyyam santharitva va santharapetva va,

任何 比丘尼 僧團的 僧房 臥具 舖設 或 使人舗設 bhikkhuni savghika vihara santharapeti seyya santharati pana m.s.Loc. f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Loc. m.s.Acc. caus.ger.

——、若比丘尼在僧房中舖設或叫人舖設臥具,

tam pakkamanto n'eva uddhareyya, na uddharapeyya, anapuccham va gaccheyya, pacittiyam.

不 收拾 不 使人收 未 請求允許 或 去 pakkamati na + eva uddharati na uddharapeti an+apuccha gacchati pacittiya m.s.Acc. ppr.(m.s.Nom.) adv. 3s.opt. adv. caus.3s.opt. ger.(m.s.Acc.) 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

她離開那(臥具)時,既未(自己)收也沒叫人收或未請(人代收),便走了,犯懺悔。

- 111. Should any bhikkhuni set out bedding in a dwelling belonging to the Community — or have it set out — and then on departing neither put it away nor have it put away, or should she go without taking leave, it is to be confessed.
- 112.Anupakhajjasikkhapadam 擠開(先到僧房的比丘尼) (=Bhikkhu P 16)
- 112.Yo pana bhikkhuni savghike vihare janam pubbupagatam bhikkhunim 任何 比丘尼 僧團 房子 知道 先 到 比丘尼 bhikkhuni vihara pubba+upagata bhikkhuni ya pana savghika ianati f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Loc. m.s.Loc. ppr.(m.s.Acc.) pp.(m.s.Acc.) f.s.Acc.

anupakhajja seyyam kappeyya, "yassa sambadho bhavissati, pakkamissati,"ti. sa擠入、擠開 床、躺下 合適 彼 擁擠 變得 此 走開 anupakkhandati seyya kappeti sambadha bhavati pakkamissati+ ta iti ya f.s.Acc. 3s.opt. f.s.Gen. m.s.Nom. 3s.fut. f.s.Nom. 3s.fut. ind.

-二、若比丘尼明知而擠進開事先已到僧房裡的比丘尼,而躺下去,(說):「覺 得擁擠的人就會離開。 |

Etad eva paccayam karitva anabbam, pacittiyam.

如此 正是 理由 作 擠進 不 其它 犯懺悔eta eva paccaya karoti an+abba pacittiya m.s.Acc. adv. m.s.Acc. ger. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

就因這樣的理由而擠進去,不爲其它(理由),犯懺悔。

112. Should any bhikkhuni knowingly lie down in a dwelling belonging to the Community so as to intrude on a bhikkhuni who arrived there first, (thinking), "Whoever finds it confining will go away" — doing it for just that reason and no other — it is to be confessed.

113.Nikkaddhanasikkhapadam 趕人出房(=Bhikkhu P 17)

113. Ya pana bhikkhuni bhikkhunim kupita anattamana savghika vihara nikkaddheyya va

任何 比丘尼 比丘尼 生氣 不 適意 僧團的 房子 拖出 bhikkhuni bhikkhuni kupita an+attamana savghika vihara nikkaddhati ya pana f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Abl. m.s.Abl. 3s.opt. conj.

nikkaddhapeyya va, pacittiyam.

使人趕走 或 犯懺悔 nikkaddhapeti va pacittiya caus.3s.opt. conj. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- ——三、若比丘尼憤怒不悦,從僧房中把比丘尼拖出去或叫人拖出去[,]犯懺悔。
- 113. Should any bhikkhuni, angry and displeased, evict a bhikkhuni from a dwelling belonging to the Community or have her evicted it is to be confessed.
- 114. Vehasakutisikkhapadam 閣樓(使用可拆卸的床椅) (=Bhikkhu P 18)
- 114. Ya pana bhikkhuni savghike vihare uparivehasakutiya ahaccapadakam mabcam va 任何 比丘尼 僧團的 房子 上 空的 屋子 可被移動 腳 床 或

ya pana bhikkhuni savghika vihara upari+vehasa+kuti ahacca+padaka mabca f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Loc. m.s.Loc. adj. m. f.s.Loc. adj. adj.(m.s.Acc.) m.s.Acc. conj

pitham va abhinisideyya va abhinipajjeyya va, pacittiyam.

長板凳 或 华 躺 或 犯懺悔 或 abhi-nipajjati pitha abhi-nisidati pacittiva n.s.Acc. conj. 3s.opt. conj. 3s.opt. conj. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 一一四、若比丘尼在僧房樓上,坐或躺在腳會脫落的床或長板凳上,犯懺悔。
- 114. Should any bhikkhuni sit or lie down on a bed or bench with detachable legs on an (unplanked) loft in a dwelling belonging to the Community, it is to be confessed.
- 115.Mahallakaviharasikkhapadam(建造)大房子(=Bhikkhu P 19)
- 115. Mahallakam pana bhikkhuniya viharam karayamanaya yava dvarakosa aggalatthapanaya

門楣、門閂 裝設 又 比丘尼 房子 建造 限於 倉庫 mahallaka pana bhikkhuni vihara karayati yava dvarakosa aggala+thapeti m.s.Acc. adv. f.s.Ins. ppr.(f.s.Ins.) adv. m.s.Abl. f. m.s.Dat. m.s.Acc.

alokasandhiparikammaya dvitticchadanassa pariyayam appaharite thitena

窗戶 準備 二 三 層 圍繞 少 農作物 站 aloka+sandhi+parikamma dvi+ti+chadana pariyaya appa+harita thiti m. m. m.s.Dat. n.s.Gen. m.s.Acc. m.s.Loc. pp.(m.s.Ins.)

一一五、比丘尼叫人建造大房子時,限於門的附近,為了裝設門楣和預留窗戸, (工作人員)站在農作物稀少的地方可以塗蓋兩三層。¹

115. When a bhikkhuni is building a large dwelling, she may apply two or three layers of facing to plaster the area around the window frame and reinforce the area around the door frame the width of the door opening,

Adhitthatabbam. Ttato ce uttarim appaharite'pi thito adhitthaheyya, pacittiyam. 安排 這 如果 超過 少 農作物 也 站 安排 犯懺悔

adhitthati ta ce uttarim appa+harite<harita +api thiti adhitthati pacittiya grd.(m.s.Nom.) s.Abl. conj. adv. m.s.Loc. ind. pp.(m.s.Nom.) 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

即使(工作人員)站在農作物稀少的地方,如果塗蓋超過了那(限定),犯懺悔。

while standing where there are no crops to speak of. Should she apply more than that, even if standing where there are no crops to speak of, it is to be confessed.

116.Sappanakasikkhapadam 有生物的水(澆到草或地上) (=Bhikkhu P 20)

116. Ya pana bhikkhuni janam sappanakam udakam tinam va mattikam va

任何 比丘尼 知道 有 生命的 水 草 土 或 udaka ya pana bhikkhuni janati sa-panaka tina mattika f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. ppr.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. f.s.Acc.

sibceyya va sibcapeyya va, pacittiyam.

澆灑或使人澆灑或犯懺悔sibcatisibcapetipacittiya3s.opt.caus.3s.opt.adj.(f.s.Nom.)

——六、若比丘尼明知而澆有生物的水到草或地上,或叫人澆,犯懺悔。

116. Should any bhikkhuni knowingly pour water containing living beings — or have it poured — on grass or on clay, it is to be confessed.

~Bhutagamavaggo ekadasamo nitthito.~

Bhojanavaggodvadasamo 食品第十二

- 117.Avasathapindasikkhapadam 在公共施食處(取食一次) (=Bhikkhu P 31)
- 117.Agilanaya bhikkhuniya eko avasathapindo bhubjitabbo. Tato ce uttarim bhubjeyya, pacittiyam. 無病 比丘尼 一處所 食物 食用 這個如果 超過 吃 犯懺悔

a+gilana bhikkhuni eka avasatha+pinda bhubjati ta bhubjati pacittiya adj.(f.s.Ins.) f.s.Ins. m.s.Nom. m. m.s.Nom. grd.(m.s.Nom.) s.Abl. conj. adv. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 一一七、無病比丘尼可以在公共施食處 2 (取)食一次。如果吃超過那(次數),犯懺悔。
- 117. A bhikkhuni who is not ill may eat one meal at a public alms center. Should she

¹《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1035.1):「若比丘尼作大房,戶扉窗牖及餘莊飾具,指授覆苫齊二三節,若過者,波逸提。」 ² Paci.IV,71 (CS:pg.97):「公共施食處:五種正食的某一個食物。在廳堂、暫時的棚、樹下、露天、無限制的、 就個人的需要及主意。無病比丘(只可)一次乞食。如果接受超過那(限量)'我將吃的',犯惡作。塞滿、再塞滿,

eat more than that, it is to be confessed.

118.Ganabhojanasikkhapadam 眾食(四人以上一起受邀吃飯) (=Bhikkhu P 32)

```
118. Ganabhojane abbatra samaya, pacittiyam. Tatthayam samayo,
                                                                         gilanasamayo,
                                     犯懺悔
                          情況 情件
                                                             情況
                                                                        生病 時候 情況
                                                 這裡
    gana+bhojana
                                                tattha+ayam
                          samaya
                                     pacittiya
                                                              samaya
                                                                        gilana+samaya
                                                             m.s.Nom.
                  adv.
                         m.s.Abl.
                                                adv. m.s.Nom.
         m.s.Loc.
                                     m.s.Nom.
                                                                             m.s.Nom.
```

一一八、(四人以上的比丘尼)眾一起(受邀)吃飯,除了適當的條件,犯懺悔。

```
civaradanasamayo,
                         civarakarasamayo,
                                                 addhanagamanasamayo,
                           衣服 製作
    給予
                                       時
                                                 路程
                                                          行走
           時
civara+ dana+samaya
                                                 addhana+gamana+samaya
                         civara+kara+samaya
            m.s.Nom.
                                    m.s.Nom.
                                                              m.s.Nom.
                               m.
                                                         n.
```

這裡的適當時候是這樣:生病時,佈施布時,作衣時,旅行時,

```
navabhiruhanasamayo, mahasamayo, samanabhattasamayo. Ayam tattha samayo.
```

```
大(眾)(集會)時
                                           沙門
                                                  食物
                                                         時
                                                                       這裡
                                                                 這
nava+abhiruhana+samaya
                        maha+samaya
                                         samana+bhatta+samaya
                                                                        tattha
                                                                                 samaya
                                                                 ayam
 f.
       n.
             m.s.Nom.
                              m.s.Nom.
                                           m.
                                                      m.s.Nom.
                                                               m.s.Nom.
                                                                          adv.
                                                                                 m.s.Nom.
```

乘船時,大眾集會時,(外道)沙門(供養)食物時。這是這裡的適當條件。

118. A group meal, except at the proper occasions, is to be confessed. Here the proper occasions are these: a time of illness, a time of giving cloth, a time of making robes, a time of going on a journey, a time of embarking on a boat, a great occasion, a time when the meal is supplied by contemplatives. These are the proper occasions here.

119.Kanamatusikkhapadam 瞎女(未分享糕點或乾餅) (=Bhikkhu P 34)

```
119. Bhikkhunim paneva kulam upagatam puvehi va manthehi va abhihatthum pavareyya,
    比丘尼
                         良家
                                   前往
                                              糕點
                                                     或
                                                           乾餅
                                                                 或
                                                                       要去帶近來
                                                                                    激請
  bhikkhuni
                pana+eva
                          kula
                                 upagcchati
                                              puva
                                                          mantha
                                                                      abhiharati
                                                                                   pavareti
   f.s.Acc.
                         n.s.Acc.
                                  pp.(m.s.Acc.)
                                               m.p.Ins.
                                                           m.p.Ins.
                                                                          ger.
                                                                                    3s.opt.
```

一一九、(在家人)邀請到了家裡的比丘尼恣意地拿糕點或乾餅,

akavkhamanaya bhikkhuniya dvattipattapura patiggahetabba.

```
需要 比丘尼 二 三 缽 滿 接受 akavkhamana bhikkhuni dvi+ti+patta+pura patigganhati ppr.(f.s.Ins.) f.s.Ins. m. m.p.Nom. grd.(m.p.Nom.)
```

需要的比丘尼可以接受兩三滿缽。

```
Tato ce uttari patigganheyya, pacittiyam.
                                               Dvattipattapure
                                                                   patiggahetva
這 如果 超過
                   接受
                                 犯懺悔
                                                  三缽
                                                                   接受
               patigganhati
                                pacittiya
                                               dvi+ti+patta+pura
                                                                  patigganhati
ta
m.s.Abl.
                   3s.opt.
                               adj.(f.s.Nom.)
                                                     m. adj.(m.p.Acc.) ger.
```

如果接受超過那(限量),犯懺悔。接受兩三滿缽,

tato niharitva bhikkhunihi saddhim samvibhajitabbam, ayam tattha samici.

那(良家) 帶離開比丘尼與分享這在這裡正確的taniharatibhikkhunisamvibhajatiayamtatthasamicim.s.Abl.ger.f.p.Ins.adv.grd.(m.s.Nom.)f.s.Nom.adv.f.s.Nom.

從那裡帶回去後,她應該與諸比丘尼一起分享。這樣(地分享)在這裡是正確的。

119. In case a bhikkhuni arriving at a family residence is presented with cakes or cooked grain-meal, she may accept two or three bowlfuls if she so desires. If she should accept more than that, it is to be confessed. Having accepted the two-or-three bowlfuls and having taken them from there, she is to share them among the bhikkhunis. This is the proper course here.

- 120. Vikalabhojanasikkhapadam 非時食(=Bhikkhu P 37)
- 120. Ya pana bhikkhuni vikale khadaniyam va bhojaniyam va khadeyya va bhubjeyya va, pacittiyam.

比丘尼 非 時候 硬食 或 軟食 咀嚼 食用 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni vi+kala khadaniya khadati bhojaniya bhubjati pacittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Loc. n.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. adj.(f.s.Nom.) 3s.opt. 3s.opt.

- 一二〇、如果任何比丘尼非時(在午後至隔天太陽出來前)咀嚼或食用硬食或軟 食,犯懺悔。
- 120. Should any bhikkhuni chew or consume staple or non-staple food at the wrong time, it is to be confessed.
- 121. Sannidhikarakasikkhapadam 儲存(超過正午的食物) (=Bhikkhu P 38)
- 121.Ya pana bhikkhuni sannidhikarakam khadaniyam va bhojaniyam va khadeyya va

軟食 阳嚼 任何 比丘尼 儲存 硬食 或 khadaniya bhikkhuni sannidhi+karaka bhojaniya khadati ya pana f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. n.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. m.

bhubjeyya va, pacittiyam.

食用 或 犯懺悔 bhubjati pacittiya 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 一二一、若比丘尼咀嚼或食用儲存(超過正午)的硬食或軟食,犯懺悔。
- 121. Should any bhikkhuni chew or consume stored-up staple or non-staple food, it is to be confessed.
- 122.Dantaponasikkhapadam 齒木(=Bhikkhu P 40)
- 122. Ya pana bhikkhuni adinnam mukhadvaram aharam ahareyya

比丘尼 門口 拿到 任何 不 與 食物 ya pana bhikkhuni a+dinna mukha+dvara ahara aharati f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. n

abbatra udakadantapona, pacittiyam.

除了 水 齒木 犯懺悔 udaka+dantapona pacittiya adv. n. m.s.Abl. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 一二二、若比丘尼拿未給與(她)的食物到嘴吧,犯懺悔。除了水和(刷牙用的)齒木外。
- 122. Should any bhikkhuni take into her mouth an edible that has not been given —

except for water and tooth-cleaning sticks — it is to be confessed.

123.Uyyojanasikkhapadam(托缽途中)趕走同伴(=Bhikkhu P 42)

123. Ya pana bhikkhuni bhikkhunim --"eh'ayye, gamam va nigamam va 來 大姐 比丘尼 鄉村 城鎮 任何 比丘尼 ya pana bhikkhuni bhikkhuni nigama eti ayye gama f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. imp.(2s.pr.) f.s.Voc. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc.

pindaya pavisissama"ti, tassa dapetva va adapetva va uyyojeyya

或 不 使給予 使給予 趕走 妣 pinda pavisati ta dapeti a+dapeti uyyojeti m.s.Abl. 1p.fut. f.s.Dat. caus.ger. caus.ger. 3s.opt.

一二三、若比丘尼如此對比丘尼說:「大姐!來呀,我們去村裡或鎮上托缽。」 不管叫不叫人給她(食物)就趕走(她),說:

"gacchayye, taya saddhim katha va nisajja na me va phasu hoti, 妳走 大姐 我 妳 說話 坐 方便 有 <gacchati ayye aham tvam <katheti nisajja phasu < hu adv. f.s.Nom. 2s.imp. f.s.Voc. f.s.Gen. f.s.Ins. f.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. 3s.pr.

「大姐!走吧,和妳一起說話或是坐在一起對我不方便,

ekikaya me katha va nisajja va phasu hoti" ti. Etad'eva paccayam karitva

或 說話 或 华. 方便 有 如此 正是 原因 作 趕走 aham <katheti < hu karoti nisajja phasu paccaya f.s.Gen. f.s.Gen. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. 3s.pr. m.s.Acc. ger.

anabbam, pacittiyam.

非 其他 犯懺悔 an + abba pacittiya adj.(m.s.Acc.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 我一個人說話或坐著才方便。」就爲了這樣的理由而趕(她走),不是因爲其它(理由),犯懺悔。
- 123. Should any bhikkhuni say to a bhikkhuni, "Come, lady, let's enter the village or town for alms," and then whether or not she has had (food) given to her dismiss her, saying, "Go away, lady. I don't like sitting or talking with you. I prefer sitting or talking alone" doing it for just that reason and no other it is to be confessed.
- 124.Sabhojanasikkhapadam 有情欲的人家(=Bhikkhu P 43)
- 124. Ya pana bhikkhuni sabhojane kule anupakhajja nisajjam kappeyya, pacittiyam. 任何 比丘尼 有(情欲爲)食物 良家 擅入 坐 合適 犯懺悔

ya pana bhikkhuni sa+bhojana kula anupakkhandati nisajja kappeti pacittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. n.s.Loc. n.s.Loc. ger. f.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 一二四、若比丘尼擅入(主人)懷有情欲的人家 1 中坐下來,犯懺悔。 2
- 124. Should any bhikkhuni sit intruding on a family "with its meal," it is to be confessed.

¹ Paci.IV,95(CS:pg.127):「有(情欲爲)食物:俗家中女與男,雙雙形影不離,雙雙不離染。」

²《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1035.2):「若比丘尼,食家中有寶,強安坐者,波逸提。」「若比丘尼,食家中有寶,在屏處坐者,波逸提。」

- 125.Rahopaticchannasikkhapadam 單獨與男人坐在隱蔽處(=Bhikkhu P 44)
- 125. Ya pana bhikkhuni purisena saddhim raho paticchanne asane nisajjam kappeyya, pacittiyam.

犯懺悔 比丘尼 男人 耙 單獨 隱密 华處 华 合適 任何 ya pana bhikkhuni pacittiya purisa rahas paticchanna kappeti asana nisajja f.s.Nom.adv. m.s.Nom. m.s.Ins. adv. n.s.Loc. n.s.Loc. f.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 一二五、若比丘尼和男人一起單獨地坐在隱密處,犯懺悔。
- 125. Should any bhikkhuni sit in private on a secluded seat with a man, it is to be confessed.
- 126.Rahonisajjasikkhapadam 單獨與男人共坐(=Bhikkhu P 45)
- 126. Ya pana bhikkhuni purisena saddhim ekeneka raho nisajjam kappeyya, pacittiyam. 單獨 任何 比丘尼 男人 坐 合適 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni ekena+ eka purisa raho nisajja kappeti pacittiva f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Ins. adv. f.s.Ins. adv. f.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)
- 一二六、若比丘尼和男人一對一單獨地坐著,犯懺悔。
- 126. Should any bhikkhuni sit in private, alone with a man, it is to be confessed.

~Bhojanavaggo dvadasamo nitthito.~

Carittavaggoterasamo 拜訪品第十三

- 127.Carittasikkhapadam(用餐前後到其他人家)拜訪(=Bhikkhu P 46)
 - 127. Ya pana bhikkhuni nimantita sabhatta bhikkhunim anapuccha santim samana 比丘尼 邀請 具有 食物 已經有 現存 比丘尼 任何 告訴 ya pana bhikkhuni atthi nimantita sa+bhatta atthi bhikkhuni an+apucchati f.s.Nom.adv. f.s.Nom. pp.(f.s.Nom.) f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. ppr.(f.s.Acc.) ger.
 - 一二七、若比丘尼已經受(某人)邀請吃飯,沒有告訴共住的比丘尼,
- purebhattam va pacchabhattam va kulesu carittam apajjeyya abbatra samaya, 之前 用餐 或 之後 行爲 拜訪 發生 用餐 良家 條件 情況 除了 kula pure+bhatta paccha+bhatta caritta apajjati samaya m.s.Abl. adv. m.s.Acc. adv n.s.Acc. n.p.Loc. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adv.

就在用餐前或用餐後拜訪(其他)人家,除了適當的情況,

pacittiyam. Tatthayam samayo, civaradanasamayo civarakarasamayo,

犯懺悔 這裡 這 條件 情況 時 衣服 衣服 pacittiya tattha+ayam civara+dana+samaya civara+kara+samaya adj.(f.s.Nom.) adv. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. m. m.s.Nom.

犯懺悔。這裡的適當情況是這樣:佈施布時,作衣時。

Ayam tattha samayo.

這 這裡 時候情況 ayam tattha samaya m.s.Nom. adv. m.s.Nom.

這是這裡的適當情況。

127. Should any bhikkhuni, being invited for a meal and without taking leave of an

available bhikkhuni, go calling on families before or after the meal, except at the proper times, it is to be confessed. Here the proper times are these: a time of giving cloth, a time of making robes. These are the proper times here.

128.Mahanamasikkhapadam 向摩訶男居士(索求供養) (=Bhikkhu P 47)

128. Agilanaya bhikkhuniya catumasapaccayapavarana saditabba abbatra punapavaranaya,

```
比丘尼
                         四月 必需品藥 邀請供養
                                                        可接受
                                                                 除了
a+gilana
            bhikkhuni
                        catu+masa+paccaya + pavarana
                                                       sadiyati
                                                                         puna+pavarana
adj.(f.s.Ins.)
             f.s.Ins.
                                           m.s.Nom.
                                                       grd.(m.s.Nom.)
                             m.
                                   m.
                                                                              m.s.Abl.
```

一二八、無病比丘尼可以接受四個月的藥資具供養,除了再次邀請、

abbatra niccapavaranaya. Tato ce uttarim sadiyeyya, pacittiyam.

```
除了 永久 邀請 這 如果 超過 接受 犯懺悔 nicca + pavarana ta sadiyati pacittiya adv. adj. f.s.Abl. s.Abl. adv. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

永久的邀請以外,如果接受超過那限制,犯懺悔。

128.A bhikkhuni who is not ill may accept (make use of) a four-month invitation to ask for requisites. If she should accept (make use of) it for beyond that — unless the invitation is renewed or is permanent — it is to be confessed.

129.Uyyuttasenasikkhapadam(往觀)出征的軍隊(=Bhikkhu P 48)

129. Ya pana bhikkhuni uyyuttam senam dassanaya gaccheyya,

```
任何 比丘尼 出發 軍隊 觀看 去 ya pana bhikkhuni uyyubjati sena dassati gacchati f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. pp.(f.s.Acc.) f.s.Acc. m.s.Dat. 3s.opt.
```

abbatra tatharupapaccaya, pacittiyam.

```
除了 適當 理由 犯懺悔
tatharupa+paccaya pacittiya
adv. adj. m.s.Abl. m.s.Nom.
```

一二九、若比丘尼去看出征的軍隊,除了適當的理由外,犯懺悔。

129. Should any bhikkhuni go to see an army on active duty, unless there is a suitable reason, it is to be confessed.

130.Senavasasikkhapadam 軍中住(=Bhikkhu P 49)

130. Siya ca tassa bhikkhuniya kocid'eva paccayo senam gamanaya, dvirattatirattam 有 而 這 比丘尼 任何強調詞 理由 軍隊 前去 二 夜 三 夜

```
atthi ta bhikkhu paccaya sena gamana<gam dvi+ratta+ti+ratta 3s.opt. f.s.Gen. f.s.Gen. m.s.Nom. adv. m.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. n.s.Dat. n. n.s.Acc.
```

一三〇、(如果)這位比丘尼有任何由理要去軍中,

taya bhikkhuniya senaya vasitabbam. Tato ce uttari vaseyya, pacittiyam.

```
這
           比丘尼
                         軍隊
                                     可以住
                                                這 如果 超過
                                                                   住
                                                                              犯懺悔
 ta
          bhikkhuni
                         sena
                                     <vasati
                                                ta
                                                                  vasati
                                                                              pacittiva
f.s.Ins.
                     f.s.Ins.
                               grd.(m.s.Acc.) s.Abl.
                                                                          adj.(f.s.Nom.)
         fs Ins
                                                                3s.opt.
```

這位比丘尼可以和軍隊同宿二至三夜,如果住超過那(期限),犯懺悔。

- 130. There being some reason or another for a bhikkhuni to go to an army, she may stay two or three (consecutive) nights with the army. If she should stay beyond that, it is to be confessed.
- 131.Uyyodhikasikkhapadam(住軍中觀)演習(=Bhikkhu P 50)
- bhikkhuni senaya vasamana uyyodhikam va balaggam va 131. Dirattatirattam ce 夜 三 夜 如果 比丘尼 軍隊 演習 集合 uyyodhika dvi+ratta+ti+ratta bhikkhuni sena vasati bala + agga n. m.s.Acc. n. n.s.Acc. f.s.Nom. f.s.Ins. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc.
- 一三一、如果比丘尼與軍隊同宿二至三夜時,如果她前往(觀看)演習、集合、

senabyuham va anikadassanam va gaccheyya, pacittiyam.

```
佈署 或 校閱 或 去 犯懺悔 sena+byuha anika+dassana <gacchati pacittiya f. m.s.Acc. n. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

佈署或閱兵,犯懺悔。

- 131. If a bhikkhuni staying two or three nights with an army should go to a battlefield, a roll call, the troops in battle formation, or to see a review of the (battle) units, it is to be confessed.
- 132.Surapanasikkhapadam 喝穀酒(等) (=Bhikkhu P 51)
- 132. Suramerayapane, pacittiyam.

穀物酒 水果酒 喝 犯懺悔 sura+meraya+pana<pivati f. n. n.s.Loc. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 一三二、喝穀酒或水果酒¹,犯懺悔。
- 132. The drinking of alcohol or fermented liquor is to be confessed.
- 133.Avgulipatodakasikkhapadam 手指搔癢(=Bhikkhu P 52)
- 133. Avgulipatodake, pacittiyam.

手指 用手指輕挪(搔) 犯懺悔 avguli + patodaka pacittiya f. m.s.Loc. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 一三三、以手指搔癢(他人),犯懺悔。
- 133. Tickling with the fingers is to be confessed.
- 134.Hasadhammasikkhapadam(水中)嬉戲(=Bhikkhu P 53)
- 134. Udake hasadhamme, pacittiyam.

水 笑 事情 犯懺悔 udaka hasa+dhamma pacittiya n.s.Loc. m. m.s.Loc. m.s.Nom.

一三四、在水中嬉戲¹,犯懺悔。

¹ Paci.IV,110(CS:pg.146):「穀酒:包括五種穀酒:穀酒、餅酒、米酒、酵母酒、調和酒。迷**羅耶酒**:花酒、果酒、蜜酒、甘蔗酒,及上述諸酒的調和酒。喝:乃至喝吉祥草端的一滴酒,都算犯懺悔。」(cf. Vin.Paci.IV,110))

- 134. The act of playing in the water is to be confessed.
- 135.Anadariyasikkhapadam 不恭敬(=Bhikkhu P 54)
- 135. Anadariye, pacittiyam.

```
不 尊敬 犯懺悔
an+adariya pacittiya
n.s.Loc. adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

- 一三五、(受教誡時態度)不恭敬,犯懺悔。
- 135. Disrespect is to be confessed.
- 136.Bhimsapanasikkhapadam 嚇驚(比丘尼) (=Bhikkhu P 55)
- 136. Ya pana bhikkhuni bhikkhunim bhimsapeyya, pacittiyam.

```
任何 比丘尼 比丘尼 使恐怖 犯懺悔 ya pana bhikkhuni bhikkhuni bhimsapeti pacittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

- 一三六、若比丘尼嚇比丘尼,犯懺悔。
- 136. Should any bhikkhuni try to frighten another bhikkhuni, it is to be confessed.

~Carittavaggo terasamo nitthito.~

Jotivaggocuddasamo 點火品第十四

- 137.Jotisikkhapadam 點火(取暖) (=Bhikkhu P 56)
 - 137. Ya pana bhikkhuni agilana visibbanapekkha jotim samadaheyya va

```
任何 比丘尼 無 病 取暖 期望 火、點火 放一起 或ya pana bhikkhuni a+gilana visibbana+ apekkha joti <samadahati f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(f.s.Nom.) n. adj.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. 3s.opt.
```

samadahapeyya va abbatra tatharupapaccaya, pacittiyam.

```
使燃燒 或 除了 適當 理由 犯懺悔
<samadahapeti tatharupa+paccaya pacittiya
3s.opt. adv. adj. m.s.Abl. adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

- 一三七、若比丘尼無病,想要取暖而點火或叫人點火,除了適當的理由外,犯懺悔。
- 137. Should any bhikkhuni who is not ill, seeking to warm herself, kindle a fire or have one kindled unless there is a suitable reason it is to be confessed.
- 138.Nahanasikkhapadam 洗澡(半個月超過一次) (=Bhikkhu P 57)
- 138. Ya pana bhikkhuni oren'addhamasam nhayeyya, abbatra samaya, pacittiyam. Tatthayam 比丘尼 內下 半 洗浴 除了 正確時候 犯懺悔 addha+masa pacittiya bhikkhu orena nahavati samaya tattha+ ayam ya pana f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Ins. adv. m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adv. m.s.Abl. adj.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Nom.
- 一三八、若比丘尼半個月內洗澡(超過一次),除了適當的情況,犯懺悔。在這裡這

¹ Paci.IV,112 (CS:pg.149):「**水中嬉戲**:在水中超過腳踝,想笑,或跳入(水)或浮水或游泳,犯懺悔。」

samayo, "diyaddho maso seso gimhanan"ti "vassanassa pathamo maso" icc'ete 正確時候 剩餘 samaya diyaddha pathama masa sesa gimaha vassana m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. m.p.Gen. m.s.Gen. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. m.p.Nom. 是適當情況。認爲「夏季剩下一個半月」和「雨季的第addhateyyamasa unhasamayo, parilahasamayo, gilanasamayo, kammasamayo, 工作 addha+teyya+masa unha+samaya parilaha+samava kamma+samava gilana+samava m.s.Nom. m.p.Nom. adj. m.s.Nom. m m m s Nom m m.s.Nom. 這兩個半月是暑時,(還有)熱時,病時,工作時, addhanagamanasamayo, vatavutthisamayo. Ayam tattha samayo. 風 這 這裡 addhana+gamana+samaya vata+vutthi+samaya ayam tattha samava f. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. adv. n. m.s.Nom. m. m.s.Nom. 旅行時,風雨時。這是這裡的適當情況。 138. Should any bhikkhuni bathe at intervals of less than half a month, except at the proper occasions, it is to be confessed. Here the proper occasions are these: the last month and a half of the hot season, the first month of the rains, these two and a half months being a time of heat, a time of fever; (also) a time of illness; a time of work; a time of going on a journey; a time of wind or rain. These are the proper times here. 139.Dubbannakaranasikkhapadam(新衣染)難看的顏色(=Bhikkhu P 58) 139. Navam pana bhikkhuniya civaralabhena tinnam dubbannakarananam abbataram 衣服 壞 顏色 狀熊 其中之-比丘尼 bhikkhuni nava civara+labhati du + vanna + karana abbatara m.s.Nom. adj.(.s.Acc.) f.s.Ins. m.s.Ins. m.p.Gen. m. n.p.Gen. dubbannakaranam adatabbam nilam va kaddamam va kalasamam va. Anada ce bhikkhu 壞 顏色 狀態 取 青色 泥色 黑褐色 不取 如果 a+dadati du+vanna+karana nila kaddama kalasama an+adiyati bhikkhu m. m.s.Nom. grd.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. ger. tinnam dubbannakaranam abbatram dubbannakaranam navam civaram paribhubjeyya, pacittiyam. 壞顏色 其中之一 壞顏色 狀態 衣服 ti du+vanna+karana abbatra du+vanna+karana nava civara paribhubjati pacittiya m.p.Gen. m. m.p.Gen. adj.(m.s.Acc.) m. n.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. m.s.Nom. 一三九、若比丘尼得到新衣服¹的時候,應該染上三種不好看的顏色的其中一種,

「Paci.IV,120 (CS:pg.159): **Navam** nama akatakappam vuccati. **Civaram** nama channam civaranam abbataram civaram.(新:未作(點)淨。衣:六種衣之一。) 六種衣:savghatim (僧伽梨)、uttarasavgam (鬱多羅僧)、antaravasakam (下裙、安陀會)、nisidanam (尼師壇) kandu-paticchadim (覆瘡衣)、vassikasatikam (雨浴衣)。作點淨唸誦:Imam bindu-kappam karomi.(一忙・敏度・卡邦・卡羅米)(我作點淨)

或是青色或泥色或黑褐色²。如果比丘未染上三種不好看的顏色的其中一種就

穿用新衣服,犯懺悔。

² 應該染上三種不好看的顏色的其中一種:雖然(染)像吉祥草端的衣也可取。**青**:兩種青:銅青、青葉青。**泥**:含水(之泥)。**黑褐**:任何褐色。(《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1035.3)作:「青、黑、木蘭」。)

139. When a bhikkhuni receives a new robe, any one of three means of discoloring it is to be applied: green, brown, or black. If a bhikkhuni should make use of a new robe without applying any of the three means of discoloring it, it is to be confessed.

140.Vikappanasikkhapadam 分享衣服(對方沒有捨出就使用) (=Bhikkhu P 59)

140. Ya pana bhikkhuni bhikkhussa va bhikkhuniya va sikkhamanaya va samanerassa va

任何	比丘尼	比丘	或	比丘尼	或	式叉摩那	或	沙彌
ya pana	bhikkhun i	bhikkhu		bhikkhuni		sikkhamana		samanera
f.s.Nom. adv.	f.s.Nom.	m.s.Dat.		f.s.Dat.		f.s.Dat.		m.s.Dat.

一四〇、若比丘尼與比丘、或比丘尼、或式叉摩那、或沙彌、沙彌尼,

samaneriya va samam civaram vikappetva apaccuddharakam¹ paribhubjeyya, pacittiyam.

沙彌尼	或自己	衣服	分享	不 捨出	使用	懺悔
samaneri	samam	civara	vikappeti	a+paccuddharaka	paribhubjati	pacittiya
f.s.Dat.	adv.	n.s.Acc.	ger.	m.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	m.s.Nom.

分享衣服,(對方)沒有捨出,就使用,犯懺悔。

140. Should any bhikkhuni, having herself placed robe-cloth under shared ownership (*vikappana*) with a bhikkhu, a bhikkhuni, a female trainee, a male novice, or a female novice, then make use of the cloth without the shared ownership's being rescinded, it is to be confessed.

141. Apanidhapanasikkhapadam 藏匿比丘尼衣缽(等)(=Bhikkhu P 60)

141. Ya pana bhikkhuni bhikkhuniya pattam va civaram va nisidanam va sucigharam va

任何	比丘尼	比丘尼	缽	或	衣 布	或 墊布	或	針 盒	1 或
ya pana	bhikkhun i	bhikkhun i	patta		civara	nisidana		suci+g	ghara
f.s.Nom. adv.	f.s.Nom.	f.s.Gen.	m.s.Acc.		n.s.Acc.	n.s.Acc.		f. n	.s.Acc.

kayabandhanam va apanidheyya va apanidhapeyya va antamaso hasapekkho'pi pacittiyam.

<i>J</i>				I I	r
身 帶子	或 藏匿	或 使人藏匿	或 縱使	玩笑 期望 也	1是 犯懺悔
kayabandhana	apanidahati	apanidhapeti		hasa+apekkha	pacittiya
m.s.Acc.	3s.opt.	3s.opt.	adv.	m.s.Nom.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 一四一、若比丘尼藏或叫人藏(其他)比丘尼的缽、或衣布、或坐具、或針盒、或腰帶,即使只為了開玩笑,犯懺悔。
- 141. Should any bhikkhuni hide (another) bhikkhuni's bowl, robe, sitting cloth, needle box, or belt or have it hidden even as a joke, it is to be confessed.

142.Sabciccasikkhapadam 故意(奪命) (=Bhikkhu P 61)

142. Ya pana bhikkhuni sabcicca panam jivita voropeyya, pacittiyam.

任何	比丘尼	故意地	生物	生命	剝奪	犯懺悔
ya pana	bhikkhun i		pana	j i vita	voropeti	pacittiya
f.s.Nom.adv	. f.s.Nom.	adv.	n.s.Acc.	m.s.Abl.	3s.opt.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

一四二、若比丘尼故意奪取生物的性命,犯懺悔。

142. Should any bhikkhuni intentionally deprive an animal of life, it is to be confessed.

 $^{^{1}}$ Paci.IV,122 (CS:pg.161):「**不捨出**:即不給予,非享用親厚的,犯懺悔。」

- 143.Sappanakasikkhapadam 有生物(的水) (=Bhikkhu P 62)
- 143. Ya pana bhikkhuni janam sappanakam udakam paribhubjeyya, pacittiyam.

任何 比丘尼 知道 有 生命的 使用 犯懺悔 udaka paribhubjati ya pana bhikkhunu janati sa-panaka pacittiya f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 一四三、若比丘尼使用明知有生物的水,犯懺悔。
- 143. Should any bhikkhuni knowingly make use of water containing living beings, it is to be confessed.
- 144.Ukkotanasikkhapadam 擾亂(明知已經依法處置的案件) (=Bhikkhu P 63)
- 144. Ya pana bhikkhuni janam yathadhammam nihatadhikaranam punakammaya ukkoteyya,

比丘尼 判定 事件 知道 規則 羯磨 擾亂 <ukkoteti bhikkhu janati yatha+dhamma nihata+adhikarana puna+kumma ya pana f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. m.s.Dat. 3s.opt.

pacittiyam.

犯懺悔 pacittiya

adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 一四四、若比丘尼爲了重新羯磨,擾亂明知已經依法處置的案件,犯懺悔。
- 144. Should any bhikkhuni knowingly agitate for the reviving of an issue that has been rightfully dealt with, it is to be confessed.
- 145.Theyyasatthasikkhapadam 與賊隊相約(=Bhikkhu P 66)
- 145. Ya pana bhikkhuni janam theyyasatthena saddhim samvidhaya ekaddhanamaggam

任何 比丘尼 知道 竊賊 商隊 一起 約定 路程 渞路 bhikkhu ianati theyya+sattha samvidahati eka+adhana+magga ya pana f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. m.s.Ins. adv. n. ger. n. m.s.Acc.

patipajjeyya antamaso gamantaram'pi, pacittiyam.

往走 乃至於 村落 之間 也 犯懺悔 patipajjati gama+antara pacittiya 3s.opt. adv. m. m.s.Acc. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 一四五、若比丘尼明知而與賊隊相約,走上同一條道路,即使只(穿過)村落之間, 犯懺悔。
- 145. Should any bhikkhuni knowingly and by arrangement travel together with a caravan of thieves, even for the interval between one village and the next, it is to be confessed.
- 146.Aritthasikkhapadam 殘酷的(主張淫欲不會障礙修行) (=Bhikkhu P 68)
- 146.Ya pana bhikkhuni evam vadeyya, "tathaham Bhagavata dhammam desitam ajanami, 世尊 比丘尼 如此 說 如此 我 開示 我理解 vadati ya pana bhikkhuni tatha+aham Bhagavant dhamma deseti ajanati f.s.Nom.adv. f.s.Nom. adv. 3s.opt. adv. s.Nom. m.s.Ins. m.s.Acc. pp.(m.s.Acc.) 1s.pr.

一四六、若比丘尼如此說:「我如此理解世尊所開示的法,

antarayika dhamma vutta Bhagavata te patisevato nalam antarayaya"ti. yatha ye'me 彼 世尊 此 不 事實上 此 障礙的 法 說 從事 如彼 dhamma Bhagavant ta ya ime antarayika vucati patisevati na+alam antarava adv. m.p. Nom. m.p. Nom. m.p. Nom. pp. (m.p. Nom.) m.s. Ins. m.p. Acc. ppr. (m.s. Dat. ind. m.s.Dat.

對於從事任何這些世尊所說的障礙法1的人,事實上沒有障礙。」

Sa bhikkhuni bhikkhunihi evam'assa vacaniya, "mayye evam avaca, ma Bhagavatam 比丘尼 不可 大姐 這 諸比丘尼 如此 有 勸告 如此 說 bhikkhuni bhikkhuni atthi vattti vatti Bhagavant ma f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. 3s.opt. grd.(f.s.Nom.) f.s.Voc. adv. 2s.aor. m.s.Acc. adv.

該比丘尼應該被諸比丘尼如此勸告:「大姐!不要這樣說,不要誤解世尊

abbhacikkhi, na hi sadhu Bhagavato abbhakkhanam, na hi Bhagava evam vadeyya.

不 因為 好 不 因為 世尊 如此 毀謗 誤解 世尊 誤解 毀謗 說 abbhacikkhati Bhagavant abbhakkhati Bhagavant vadati 2s.aor. adv. adv. m.s.Gen. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. adv. 3s.opt.

因爲誤解世尊是不好的,而且世尊並沒有這樣說。

Anekapariyayenayye antarayika dhamma vutta Bhagavata alabca pana te

不 一 方法 隨礙 法 說 世奠 足夠 這些 an+eka+pariyaya antaravika dhamma vucati Bhagavant alam ta m.s.Ins. f.s.Voc. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. pp.(m.p.Nom.) m.s.Ins. adv. adv. m.p.Acc.

朋友!世尊用許多方法說明障礙法,而且從事這些事情足以造成障礙。」

patisevato antarayaya"ti. Evabca sa bhikkhuni bhikkhunihi vuccamana tath'eva

從事 障礙 如此 而 這 比丘尼 比丘尼 勸告 如此 仍 bhikkhuni bhikkhuni patisevati antaraya ta <vucati tatha m.s.Dat. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. ppr.(m.s.Dat.) f.p.Ins. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) adv.

而該比丘尼被諸比丘尼這樣勸告時,仍然那樣堅持,

pagganheyya, sa bhikkhuni bhikkhunihi yavatatiyam samanubhasitabba

比丘尼 這 比丘尼 直到 第三 努力 勸告 bhikkhuni bhikkhuni yava+tatiyam samanubhasati pagganhati ta 3s.opt. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. adv. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

諸比丘尼應該乃至三次勸告該比丘尼去放棄那(主張)。

tassa patinissaggaya. Yavatatiyabce samanubhasiyamana tam patinissajjeyya,

它 捨棄 直到 第三 如果 勸 它 捨棄 yava+tatiyam samanubhasati ta patinissajjati m.s.Gen. m.s.Dat. adv. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. 3s.opt.

如果到了第三次被勸告時,(她)放棄它,

icc'etam kusalam. No ce patinissajjeyya, pacittiyam.

.

¹ 障礙法:障道法,行婬欲。

如此 這 善 不 如果 捨棄 犯懺悔 kusala patinissajjati pacittiya n.s.Nom. n.s.Nom. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

那就好。如果不捨棄,犯懺悔。

146. Should any bhikkhuni say the following: "As I understand the Dhamma taught by the Blessed One, those acts the Blessed One says are obstructive, when engaged in are not genuine obstructions," the bhikkhunis are to admonish her thus: "Do not say that, lady. Do not misrepresent the Blessed One, for it is not good to misrepresent the Blessed One. The Blessed One would not say anything like that. In many ways, lady, the Blessed One has described obstructive acts, and when engaged in they are genuine obstructions."

And should that bhikkhuni, thus admonished by the bhikkhunis, persist as before, the bhikkhunis are to rebuke her up to three times so as to desist. If while being rebuked up to three times she desists, that is good. If she does not desist, it is to be confessed.

~Jotivaggo cuddasamo nitthito.~

Ditthivaggopannarasamo 邪見品第十五

- 147.Ukkhittasambhogasikkhapadam.中止共食(=Bhikkhu P 69)
 - 147. Ya pana bhikkhuni janam tathavadiniya bhikkhuniya akatanudhammaya tam ditthim 任何 比丘尼 知道 如那樣 說 比丘尼 不 做 依法 那 (票)見解 pana bhikkhuni janati tatha+vadin bhikkhuni a+kata+anudhamma ditthi ta f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. adv. adj.(f.s.Ins.) f.s.Ins. m.s.Ins. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. pp.
 - 一四七、若比丘尼明知(犯戒)比丘尼那樣子主張(淫行非障道法)、未(被僧團)依法解除(不分享生活的處分)、尚未放棄那邪見,

appatinissatthaya saddhim sambhubjeyya va samvaseyya va saha va seyyam kappeyya,

```
共住
                     和
                                 共食
                                               或
                                                                 或 同 或 床、睡覺
a+patinissajjati
                             sambhubjati
                                                    samvasati
                                                                                          kappeti
                                                                               seyya
adj.(f.s.Ins.)
                    adv.
                              3s.opt.
                                                    3s.opt.
                                                                               m.s.Acc.
                                                                                           3s.opt.
```

pacittiyam.

犯懺悔 pacittiya

adj.(f.s.Nom.)

她與犯者共食1、共住2、或共宿的話,犯懺悔。

147. Should any bhikkhuni knowingly commune, affiliate, or lie down in the same dwelling with a bhikkhuni professing such a view who has not acted in compliance with the rule, who has not abandoned that view, it is to be confessed.

¹ Paci.IV,137(CS:pg.180): 「一起吃:有兩種意思──吃食物和聽法。」

² samvaseyya:共住。這裡的「住」重點是在於「住在僧團,遵守僧團的規定」。其反義字「asamvasa」即「四驅擯」的戒條中「若有比丘……是驅擯,不共住」,最後那句「不共住」,含有「自僧團驅出」的意思。

148.Kantakasikkhapadam 障礙(法) (=Bhikkhu P 70)

148. Samanuddesapi ce evam vadeyya, "tathaham Bhagavata dhammam desitam ajanami, 也 如果 如此 說 如此 世奠 開示 我 samanuddesa aham Bhagavant dhamma ajanati vadati deseti f.s.Nom. adv. 3s.opt. adv. m.s.Nom. m.s.Ins. m.s.Acc. pp.(m.s.Acc.) 1s.pr.

一四八、沙彌尼也這樣說:「我如此理解世尊所開示的法,

148. And if a female novice should say the following: "As I understand the Dhamma taught by the Blessed One,

yatha ye'me antarayika dhamma vutta Bhagavata te patisevato nalam antarayaya" ti. 如彼 任何 這些 障礙的 事情 世奠 這些 不 事實上 妨礙 ya ime antarayika dhamma vucati Bhagavant ta patisevati na+alam adv. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. pp.(m.p.Nom.) m.s.Ins. m.p.Acc. m.p.Acc. ppr.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Dat.

對於從事這些世尊所說的障礙法的人,事實上沒有障礙。」

those acts the Blessed One says are obstructive, when engaged in are not genuine obstructions,"

Sa samanuddesa bhikkhunihi evam'assa vacaniya, "mayye, samanuddese evam avaca, 諸比丘尼 如此 有 勸告 不可 大姐 沙彌尼 說 samanuddesa bhikkhuni atthi <vatti ma +ayye samanuddesa vatti f.p.Ins. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. adv. 3s.opt. grd.(f.s.Nom.) f.s.Voc. f.s.Voc. adv. 2s.aor.

這位沙彌尼應該被諸比丘尼這樣勸誡:「大姐!沙彌尼!不要這樣說,

the bhikkhunis are to admonish her thus: "Do not say that, lady novice.

ma Bhagavantam abbhacikkhi, na hi sadhu Bhagavato abbhakkhanam, na hi

不可 世尊 毀謗 誤解 不 因爲 好 世尊 誤解 毀謗 不 因爲 Bhagavant abbhacikkhati m.s.Acc. 2s.imp. adv. m.s.Gen. m.s.Nom.

不要誤解世尊,因爲誤解世尊是不好的,而且世尊並沒有這樣說。

Do not misrepresent the Blessed One, for it is not good to misrepresent the Blessed One. The Blessed One would not say anything like that.

Bhagava evam vadeyya. Anekapariyayenayye, samanuddese antarayika dhamma

世尊 如此 不 方法 大姐 沙彌尼 障礙 事情 an+eka+pariyaya Bhagavant <vadati samanuddesa dhamma ayye antarayika m.s.Nom. adv. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Ins.) f.s.Voc. f.s.Voc. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom.

大姐!沙彌尼!世尊用許多方法說明障礙的事情,

In many ways, lady, the Blessed One has described obstructive acts,

vutta Bhagavata alabca pana te patisevato antarayaya" ti.

競 世尊 足夠 而且 這些 從事 障礙 vucati Bhagavant ta patisevati antaraya pp.(m.p.Nom.) m.s.Ins. m.p.Acc. ppr.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Dat.

而且從事這些事情足以造成障礙。」

and when engaged in they are genuine obstructions."

Evabca pana sa samanuddesa bhikkhunihi vuccamana tath'eva pagganheyya,

如此 而且 這位 沙彌尼 諸比丘尼 勸告 如此 努力 evam pagganhati ta samanuddesa bhikkhu <vucati tatha adv. adv. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Ins. ppr.(f.s.Nom.) 3s.opt. adv.

而這位沙彌尼被諸比丘尼這樣勸戒時,仍然那樣堅持,

And should that female novice, thus admonished by the bhikkhunis, persist as before,

sa samanuddesa bhikkhunihi evam'assa vacaniya,

這位 沙彌尼 比丘尼 如此 有 勸告 sa samanuddesa bhikkhuni atthi vatti m.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m.p.Ins. adv. 3s.opt. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

諸比丘尼應該如此訓誡這位沙彌尼:

the bhikkhunis are to admonish her thus:

"Ajjatagge te, ayye, samanuddese na c'eva so Bhagava Sattha apadisitabbo, yam'pi 今後 大姐 沙彌尼 導師 尊稱 引述 ajja+agga tvam samanuddesa ta Bhagavant Satthar <apadisati m.s.Loc. f.s.Ins. f.s.Voc. f.s.Voc. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom. grd.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. m.s.Nom.

「大姐!沙彌尼!今後妳既不能尊稱世尊爲導師,

"From this day forth, lady novice, you are not to claim the Blessed One as your teacher,

c'abba samanuddesa labhanti bhikkhunihi saddhim dvirattatirattam sahaseyyam, sa'pi te

其他 得到 比丘尼 二夜三夜 司 宿 ca abba sananuddesa labhati bhikkhunu dvi+ratta+ti+ratta saha+seyya sa+api tvam m.p.Nom. f.p.Nom. 3p.pr. f.p.Ins. n.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. m.s.Nom. m.s.Gen.

而且,其他的沙彌尼得與諸比丘尼同宿兩三夜(的許可),妳也沒有這種(權力)了。

nor are you even to have the opportunity the other female novices get — that of sharing dwellings two or three nights with the bhikkhunis.

n'atthi, cara pire vinassa''ti. Ya pana bhikkhuni janam tatha nasitam samanuddesam

沒有 走開 任何 滅擯 沙彌尼 消失 比丘尼 知道 carati pi+re bhikkhuni samanuddesa <vinassati va <ianati naseti 3s.pr. 2s.imp. adv. ind. 2s.imp. f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. adv. pp.(f.s.Acc.) f.s.Acc.

喂!妳走開,離開。」若有比丘尼明知如此被滅擯的沙彌尼,

Away with you! Get lost!" Should any bhikkhuni knowingly

upalapeyya va upatthapeyya va sambhubjeyya va saha va seyyam kappeyya, pacittiyam.

安慰 或 令照顧 共 或 犯懺悔 共食 床、睡覺 合適 upalapeti upatthapeti sambhubjati seyya kappeti pacittiya caus.3s.opt. caus.3s.opt. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. 3s.opt.

而安慰她或受她服務,或與她共食或共宿,犯懺悔。

support, receive services from, consort with, or lie down in the same dwelling with a female novice thus expelled, it is to be confessed.

149.Sahadhammikasikkhapadam 依法(規勸) (=Bhikkhu P 71)

149. Ya pana bhikkhuni bhikkhunihi sahadhammikam vuccamana evam vadeyya,

```
任何
             比丘尼
                           比丘尼
                                         共
                                               法
                                                              勸告時
                                                                                    說
                                                                           如此
            bhikkhuni
                         bhikkhuni
                                       saha+dhammika
                                                             <vucati
                                                                                  <vatti
                                                                                 3s.opt.
f.s.Nom.
            f.s.Nom.
                          f.p.Ins.
                                               m.s.Acc.
                                                             ppr.(f.s.Nom.)
                                                                           adv.
```

一四九、若比丘尼被諸比丘尼依法規勸時,她這樣說:

149. Should any bhikkhuni, admonished by the bhikkhunis in accordance with a rule, say,

```
"Na tavaham ayye etasmim sikkhapade sikkhissami yava n'abbam bhikkhunim byattam
```

```
不 直到這 我 大姐
                              學處
                                       自我訓練 學習 直到那
                                                                 其他
                                                                         比丘尼
                                                                                     有學問的
                       這
                                                                                    byatta
   tava+aham
                      etad
                             sikkhapada
                                          sikkhati
                                                             na+ abba
                                                                        bhikkhunu
     s.Nom. f.s.Voc. m.s.Loc.
                             n.s.Loc.
                                           1s fut
                                                     adv. adj.(f.s.Acc.)
                                                                        f.s.Acc.
                                                                                  adj.(f.s.Acc.)
```

vinayadharam paripucchami"ti, pacittiyam.

```
律 持 請教 犯懺悔 vinaya+dhara paripucchati ti pacittiya m. adj.(f.s.Acc.) 1s.fut. adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

「大姐!我尚未請教其他精通戒律的有學問比丘尼(之前),我就不遵行這條學 處。」犯懺悔。

"Ladies, I will not train myself under this training rule until I have put questions about it to another bhikkhuni, experienced and learned in the discipline," it is to be confessed.

Sikkhamanaya bhikkhave bhikkhuniya abbatabbam paripucchitabbam paripabhitabbam.

學習	諸比丘尼	比丘尼	瞭解	請教	詢問
sikkhati	bhikkhun i	bhikkhun i	<a+janati< td=""><td><paripucchati< td=""><td><paripabhati< td=""></paripabhati<></td></paripucchati<></td></a+janati<>	<paripucchati< td=""><td><paripabhati< td=""></paripabhati<></td></paripucchati<>	<paripabhati< td=""></paripabhati<>
ppr.(f.s.Ins.)	f.s.Voc.	f.s.Ins.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)	grd.(f.s.Nom.)	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

諸比丘尼!正在學習的比丘尼應該請教詢問(以求)理解。

Ayam tattha samici.

這 這裡 正確

ayam

f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.

在這裡這是正確的(做法)。

Bhikkhus, [the Buddha is apparently addressing the bhikkhus who will inform the bhikkhunis of this training rule] a bhikkhuni in training should understand, should ask, should ponder. This is the proper course here.

150. Vilekhanasikkhapadam 迷惑小小學處(=Bhikkhu P 72)

150. Ya pana bhikkhuni patimokkhe uddissamane evam vadeyya, "kimpan' imehi

```
任何
              比丘尼
                          波提木叉
                                            誦
                                                       如此
                                                                 說
                                                                           爲什麼
            bhikkhuni
                         patimokkha
                                          uddisati
                                                                <vatti
                                                                           kim +pana
                                                                                       ime
f.s.Nom.
            f.s.Nom.
                          m.s.Loc.
                                        pass.ppr.(m.s.Loc.) adv.
                                                                 3s.opt.
                                                                                 adv.
                                                                                        m.p.Ins.
```

一五〇、若比丘尼在誦波提木叉時,她這樣說:

150. Should any bhikkhuni, when the Patimokkha is being recited, say,

khuddanukhuddakehi sikkhapadehi udditthehi, yavad'eva kukkuccaya vihesaya 學處 更小 更雜 最多 只 誦 khudda+anukhuddaka kukkucca<(kud 錯誤+kicca 作) vihesa sikkhapada uddisati adj. m.p.Ins. pp.(m.p.Ins.) adv. n.s.Dat. m.s.Dat. n.p.Ins. 「爲什麼誦出這些細小和更細小的學處呢?最多只是導致追悔、困擾、 "Why are these lesser and minor training rules recited when they lead only to anxiety, bother, vilekhaya samvattanti" ti. Sikkhapadavivannanake, pacittiyam. 洣惑 毀謗 vilekha samvattati sikkhapada+<vivanneti pacittiya m.s.Dat. 3p.pr. m.s.Loc. adj.(f.s.Nom.) 迷惑而已。」當毀謗學處,犯懺悔。 and confusion?" the criticism of the training rules is to be confessed. 151.Mohanasikkhapadam(不因)無知(而開脫罪狀) (=Bhikkhu P 73) 151. Ya pana bhikkhuni anvaddhamasam patimokkhe uddissamane evam vadeyya, 任何 比丘尼 隨 半個月 波提木叉 誦 如此 說 bhikkhuni anu+addha+masa patimokkha uddisati vadati f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. adj. m.s.Acc. m.s.Loc. ppr.(m.s.Loc.) adv. 3s.opt. 一五一、若比丘尼每半個月在誦波提木叉時,她這樣說: 151. Should any bhikkhuni, when the Patimokkha is being recited every half-month, say, "Idan'eva kho aham ayye, ajanami, ayam'pi kira dhammo suttagato suttapariyapanno 大姐 也 真的 規則 (戒)經 (傳)來 (戒)經 包含 現在 才 我 知道 idani+eva aham a-janati dhamma sutta+agata sutta+pariyapanna m.s.Nom. n. pp.(m.s.Nom.) n. adv s.Nom. f.s.Voc. 1s.pr. m.s.Nom. pp.(m.s.Nom.) anvaddhamasam uddesam agacchati" ti. 每半個月 誦 agacchati anu+addha+masa uddisati adj. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. 3s.pr. 「大姐!現在我才知道,這條規則確實也在(戒)經中傳承、包含在(戒)經中,每 半個月誦出來。」 "Just now have I learned that this case, too, is handed down in the Patimokkha, is included in the Patimokkha, and comes up for recitation every half-month"; Tabce bhikkhunim abba bhikkhuniyo janeyyum,"nisinnapubbam imaya bhikkhuniya 這 如果 比丘尼 其他 坐下 出席 以前 比丘尼 諸比丘尼 知道 tam bhikkhuni abba bhikkhuni ianati <nisidati pubba bhikkhuni f.s.Acc. f.s.Acc. adj.(f.p.Nom.) f.p.Nom. pp.(f.s.Acc.) f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins. 3p.opt. 如果其他比丘尼知道這位比丘尼, and if the bhikkhunis should know, dvittikkhattum patimokkhe uddissamane ko pana vado bhiyyo"ti.

波提木叉

patimokkha

m.s.Loc.

次

dvi+ti+khattum

m.s.Acc.

誦

ppr.(m.s.Loc.)

uddissati

何況

說

<vadati

m.s.Nom.

較多

bhiyya

m.s.Nom.

誦波提木叉時這位比丘尼以前出席過兩三次,更何況說(她已出席)多次。

"That bhikkhuni has already sat through two or three recitations of the Patimokkha,

Na ca tassa bhikkhuniya abbanakena mutti atthi, yabca tattha apattim apanna,

不 而且 這 比丘尼 無知 免除 開脫 Ħ. 這裡 犯錯 犯 bhikkhuni a+banaka ca mubcati apatti apajjati m.s.Gen. f.s.Gen. m.s.Ins. m.s.Nom. 3s.pr. m.s.Acc. adv. f.s.Acc. pp.(f.s.Nom.)

這位比丘尼既不因無知而開脫,而且應如法地處理(她)在此所犯的錯,

if not more," the bhikkhuni is not exempted for being ignorant. Whatever the offense she has committed, she is to be dealt with in accordance with the rule;

tabca yathadhammo karetabbo, uttari cassa moho aropetabbo,

此月 如法 進一步 且 她 愚痴 加上 處理 yatha+dhamma <aruhati ca moha ta karoti m.s.Acc. m.s.Nom. grd.(m.s.Nom.) f.s.Dat. m.s.Nom. caus.grd.(m.s.Nom.)

(僧團)並應進一步加上愚癡(的罪)給她:

and in addition, her deceit is to be exposed:

te dulladdham, yam alabha, tvam patimokkhe udissamane "tassa te, ayye, tassa 大姐 妳 無 利益 這 妳 難 得到 妳 波提木叉 誦出 這 tvam a+labhati ta tvam du+labhati tvam patimokkha uddisati ya f.s.Gen. f.s.Dat. f.s.Voc. m.s.Dat. f.s.Gen. ppr.(m.s.Loc.) s.Dat. m.s.Acc. m.s.Nom. s.Nom. m.s.Loc.

na sadhukam atthim katva manasikarosi"ti.

不 好好地 目標 做 意 作 sadhuka attha+ karoti(=atthikatva) manasa + karoti adv. ger. 2s.pr.

「大姐!這(誦戒)對妳沒有獲益,這(誦戒)對妳難以獲益,妳在誦波提木叉時不好好地集中目標注意(聽)。」

"It is no gain for you, lady, it is ill-done, that when the Patimokkha is being recited, you do not pay proper attention and take it to heart."

Idam tasmim mohanake, pacittiyam.

這 它 導致愚癡 犯懺悔 ta mohanaka pacittiya m.s.Nom. m.s.Loc. m.s.Loc. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

因爲導致愚癡,這犯懺悔。

As for the deception, is to be confessed.

152.Paharasikkhapadam 打(比丘尼) (=Bhikkhu P 74)

152. Ya pana bhikkhuni bhikkhuniya kupita anattamana paharam dadeyya, pacittiyam.

任何 比丘尼 比丘尼 不 適意 給予 bhikkhuni bhikkhuni kupita dadati ya an+attamana paharati pacittiya f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.s.Dat. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. m.s.Nom.

- 一五二、若比丘尼憤怒不悦而打比丘尼,犯懺悔。
- 152. Should any bhikkhuni, angered and displeased, give a blow to (another) bhikkhuni, it is to be confessed
- 153. Talasattikasikkhapadam(舉)掌作武器(=Bhikkhu P 75)
- 153. Ya pana bhikkhuni bhikkhuniya kupita anattamana talasattikam uggireyya, pacittiyam.

任何 比丘尼 比丘尼 牛氣 不 適意 手掌 武器的 bhikkhuni bhikkhuni kupita an+attamana tala + sattika uggirati pacittiya f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.s.Dat. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(f.s.Nom.) n. adj.(m.s.Acc.) 3s.opt. m.s.Nom.

- 一五三、若比丘尼憤怒不悦,對著比丘尼舉起手掌當作武器,犯懺悔。
- 153. Should any bhikkhuni, angered and displeased, raise the palm of her hand against (another) bhikkhuni, it is to be confessed.
- 154.Amulakasikkhapadam 無憑無據地(毀謗比丘尼) (=Bhikkhu P 76)
- 154. Ya pana bhikkhuni bhikkhunim amulakena savghadisesena anuddhamseyya, pacittiyam.

犯懺悔 任何 比丘尼 比丘尼 無 根據 僧殘 毀謗 bhikkhuni bhikkhuni a+mulaka savghadisesa anuddhamseti pacittiya f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.s.Acc. adj.(m.s.Ins.) m.s.Ins. 3s.opt. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 一五四、若比丘尼無憑無據地段誇比丘尼犯僧殘戒,犯懺悔。
- 154. Should any bhikkhuni charge a bhikkhuni with an unfounded Savghadisesa (offense), it is to be confessed.
- 155.Sabciccasikkhapadam 故意(導致比丘尼追悔) (=Bhikkhu P 77)
- 155. Ya pana bhikkhuni bhikkhuniya sabcicca kukkuccam upadaheyya, "itissa muhuttampi

引起 加予 任何 比丘尼 比丘尼 故意地 追悔 如此 她 一下子 bhikkhuni bhikkhunu kukkucca upadahati iti+ ta muhutta + pi f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.s.Dat. adv. n.s.Acc. 3s.opt. m.s.Gen. m.s.Acc.

aphasu bhavissati"ti etad eva paccayam karitva anabbam, pacittiyam.

如此 正是 原因 非 其它 不安 有 做 犯懺悔 an+abba a+phasu bhavati karoti pacittiya paccaya adj.(m.s.Acc.) adj.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Nom. 3s.fut. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. ger.

- 一五五、若比丘尼故意導致比丘尼追悔,(想著):「這樣(一來),她就會有一下子的不安」。就因這樣的理由而做,不是其它理由,犯懺悔。
- 155. Should any bhikkhuni purposefully provoke anxiety in (another) bhikkhuni, (thinking,) "This way, even for just a moment, she will have no peace" doing it for just that reason and no other it is to be confessed.
- 156.Upassutisikkhapadam(比丘尼諍論後)竊聽(=Bhikkhu P 78)
- 156. Ya pana bhikkhuni bhikkhuninam bhandanajatanam kalahajatanam vivadapannanam

任何 比丘尼 諸比尼 吵嘴 口角 諍論 發生 發生 達到 bhikkhu bhikkhuni bhandana+janati kalaha+janati vivada+apajjati f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. f.p.Gen. pp.(m.p.Gen.) m. pp.(m.p.Gen.) m. pp.(m.p.Gen.)

一五六、若比丘尼站著竊聽發生過諍論、吵嘴或口角的比丘(的談話),

upassutim tittheyya, "yam ima bhanissanti, tam sossami"ti. Etad eva paccayam

竊聽 站立 這 她們 說 此 聽 如此 原因 upassuti titthati imam bhanati sunati paccaya m.s.Acc. 3s.opt. m.s.Acc. f.p.Nom. 3p.fut. m.s.Acc. 1s.fut. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc.

(心想):「我要聽聽她們在說什麼」,就因這樣的理由而做,

karitva anabbam, pacittiyam.

做 其它 犯懺悔 karoti an+abba pacittiya ger. adj.(m.s.Acc.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

不爲其它理由,犯懺悔。

156. Should any bhikkhuni stand eavesdropping on bhikkhunis when they are arguing, quarreling, and disputing, thinking, "I will overhear what they say" — doing it for just that reason and no other — it is to be confessed.

~Ditthivaggo pannarasamo nitthito.~

Dhammikavaggosolasamo 依法品第十六

157.Kammappatibahanasikkhapadam 拒絕羯磨(=Bhikkhu P 79)

157. Ya pana bhikkhuni dhammikanam kammanam chandam datva paccha

比丘尼 任何 依法 羯磨 處置 同意 興欲 給予 後來 bhikkhuni dhammika chanda dadati kamma f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m.p.Dat. m.p.Dat. m.s.Acc. ger. adv.

khiyyanadhammam apajjeyya, pacittiyam.

批評 (羯磨)事情 落入 到達 犯懺悔 khiyyana(=khiyana)+dhamma apajjati pacittiya n. m.s.Acc. opt.(3s.pr.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 一五七、若比丘尼(未出席),(而委託餘比丘尼)表明同意如法的羯磨,後來卻批評(那)羯磨,犯懺悔。¹
- 157. Should any bhikkhuni, having given consent (by proxy) to a transaction carried out in accordance with the rule, later complain (about the act), it is to be confessed.

158.Chandam-adatvagamanasikkhapadam 沒有表明同意(如法羯磨) (=Bhikkhu P 80)

158. Ya pana bhikkhuni savghe vinicchayakathaya vattamanaya chandam adatva

任何 比丘尼 調査 決定 同意 未 給予 bhikkhuni vinicchava+katha a+dadati savgha vatteti chanda f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m.s.Loc. f.s.Loc. m. ppr.(m.s.Loc.) m.s.Acc. ger.

utthayasana pakkameyya, pacittiyam.

起立 座位 離開 犯懺悔 utthaya+asana pakkamati paccittiya ger. n.s.Abl. opt.(pr.3.s.) adj.(f.s.Nom.)

¹《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1036.2):「若比丘尼與欲竟,後更呵者,波逸提。_」

(n-c-e)Bhikkhunipatimokkha	
10-0-0	DIIIKKIIUIIIDAUIIIOKKIIA	

- 一五八、若比丘尼在僧團討論事情時,沒有表明同意(如法羯磨)就起座離開,犯懺悔。
- 158. Should any bhikkhuni, when deliberation is being carried on in the Community, get up from her seat and leave without having given consent, it is to be confessed.
- 159.Dubbalasikkhapadam 批評如法分配衣服(=Bhikkhu P 81)
- 159. Ya pana bhikkhuni samaggena savghena civaram datva paccha khiyyanadhammam

任何	比丘尼	和諧	僧團	衣服	給予	之後	批評	(分配)事情
	bhikkhuni	samagga	savgha	civara	dadati		khiyyana	+dhamma
f.s.Nom.	f.s.Nom.	m.s.Ins.	m.s.Ins.	n.s.Acc.	ger.	adv.	n.	m.s.Acc.

apajjeyya "yathasanthutam bhikkhuniyo savghikam labham parinamenti"ti, pacittiyam.

落入 到達	如 交誼 熟識	諸比丘尼	僧團的	獲得物	挪(給某人使)用	犯懺悔
apajjati	yatha+santhuta	bhikkhun i	savghika	labhati	pari n amati	pacittiya
3s.opt.	adv. pp.(m.s.Acc.)	f.p.Nom.	m.s.Acc.	m.s.Acc.	3p.caus.	adj.(f.s.Nom.)

- 一五九、若比丘尼在和合的僧團分給(某比丘尼)衣服後批評(那)分配,說:「諸比丘尼依照交情挪用僧團獲得的物品」,犯懺悔。
- 159. Should any bhikkhuni, (acting as part of) a united Community, give robe-cloth (to an individual bhikkhuni) and later complain, "The bhikkhunis apportion the Community's gains according to friendship," it is to be confessed.
- 160.Parinamanasikkhapadam 轉移(供養) (=Bhikkhu P 82)
- 160. Ya pana bhikkhuni janam savghikam labham parinatam puggalassa parinameyya, pacittiyam.

```
任何
         比丘尼
                   知道
                            僧團的
                                         獲得物
                                                   供養
                                                               人
                                                                         轉送
                                                                                    犯懺悔
         bhikkhuni janati
                            savghika
                                       labhati
                                                parinamati
                                                                      parinamati
                                                                                    pacittiya
                                                             puggala
f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. adj.(m.s.Acc.) m.s.Acc. pp.(m.s.Acc.) m.s.Dat.
                                                                     caus.3s.opt.
                                                                                  adj.(f.s.Nom.)
```

- 一六〇、若比丘尼明知而挪用供養僧團的物品給個人,犯懺悔。
- 160. Should any bhikkhuni knowingly divert to an individual gains that had been allocated for a Community, it is to be confessed.
- 161.Ratanasikkhapadam 寶物(=Bhikkhu P 84)
- 161. Ya pana bhikkhuni ratanam va ratanasammatam va abbatra ajjharama va ajjhavasatha

任何	比丘尼	寶物	或	寶物	認爲	或	除了	道場	或	住處
	bhikkhun i	ratana		ratana+s	ammannati			adhi+arama		adhi+avasatha
f.s.Nom.	f.s.Nom.	n.s.Acc.		n. pp.	(m.s.Acc.)			m.s.Abl		m.s.Abl.

va ugganheyya va ugganhapeyya va, pacittiyam. Ratanam va pana bhikkhuniya

```
撿拾
              或
                      使撿拾
                                         犯懺悔
                                                                     又
                                                                             比丘尼
ugganhati
               ugganhati
                                       pacittiya
                                                                          bhikkhuni
                                                   ratana
                                      m.s.Nom.
3s.opt.
              caus.3s.opt.
                                                   n.s.Nom.
                                                                        f.s.Ins.
```

ratanasammatam va ajjharame va ajjhavasathe va uggahetva va ugganhapetva va

```
寶物
         認為
                         道場
                                            住處
                                                           撿拾
                                                                          使撿拾
ratana+sammannati
                      adhi+arama
                                      adhi+avasatha
                                                                          ugganhati
                                                         ugganhati
       m.s.Nom.
                          m.s.Loc.
                                            m.s.Loc.
                                                                          caus.ger.
                                                             ger.
```

一六一、若比丘尼除了在(自己的)道場或住處,撿拾或叫人撿拾寶物或被認爲是 寶物的東西,犯懺悔。而在自己的道場或住處撿拾或叫人撿拾後,寶物或被

認爲是寶物的東西,

nikkhipitabbam "yassa bhavissati so harissati" ti. Ayam tattha samici.

放置 那人 將有 他 帶走 這 這裡 正確的 nikkhipati ya bhavati ta harati grd.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Gen. 3s.fut. m.s.Nom. 3s.fut. f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom.

應該被比丘尼保存(而考慮):「那擁有的人會(來)帶走」。在這裡這是正確的(做法)。

- 161. Should any bhikkhuni pick up or have (someone) pick up a valuable or what is considered a valuable, except in a monastery or in a dwelling, it is to be confessed. But when a bhikkhuni has picked up or had (someone) pick up a valuable or what is considered a valuable (left) in a monastery or in a dwelling, she is to keep it, (thinking,) "Whoever it belongs to will (come and) fetch it." This is the proper course here.
- 162.Sucigharasikkhapadam 針盒(=Bhikkhu P 86)
- 162. Ya pana bhikkhuni atthimayam va dantamayam va visanamayam va sucigharam 任何 比丘尼 製 或 (象)牙 或 (獸)角 針 bhikkhuni atthi+maya danta+mava visana+maya suci+ghara ya f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. n. adj.(n.s.Acc.) n. adj.(n.s.Acc.) f. n.s.Acc. n. adj.(n.s.Acc.)

karapeyya, bhedanakam, pacittiyam.

使人作 值得打破的 犯懺悔 karoti bhedanaka pacittiya caus.3s.opt. adj.(m.s.Acc.) m.s.Nom.

- 一六二、若比丘尼叫人作骨製、象牙1製或獸角製的針盒,犯懺悔,(而且針盒)應打破。
- 162. Should any bhikkhuni have a needle box made of bone, ivory, or horn, it is to be broken and confessed.
- 163.Mabcapithasikkhapadam 新床或長板凳(=Bhikkhu P 87)
- 163. Navam pana bhikkhuniya mabcam va pitham va karayamanena atthavgulapadakam 比丘尼 床 或 長板凳 或 使作 nava bhikkhun**i** mabca pitha kareti attha+avgula+padaka adj.(m.s.Acc.) f.s.Ins. m.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. caus.ppr.(m.s.Ins.) n. adj.(m.s.Nom.)
- 一六三、比丘尼叫人作新床或長板凳時,腳可以作八(善逝)指的指長,

karetabbam Sugatavgulena, abbatra hetthimaya ataniya.

使作 善逝 指 除了 底部 榫頭 kareti Sugata+avgula hetthima atani grd.(m.s.Nom.) m. n.s.Ins. adj.(m.s.Abl.) adj.(m.s.Abl.)

除了下面的接榫部份,由於超過這(長度),

Tam atikkamentiya, chedanakam, pacittiyam.

這 超過 切除 犯懺悔 ta atikkamaya chedaka pacittiya m.s.Acc. adj.(f.s.Abl.) m.s.Acc. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

犯懺悔,(而且過長部份)應切除。1

Paci.IV,167(CS:pg.217):「牙,即象牙(hatthidanto)」。

163. When a bhikkhuni is having a new bed or bench made, it is to have legs (at most) eight fingerbreadths long — using Sugata fingerbreadths — not counting the lower edge of the frame. In excess of that it is to be cut down and confessed.

164. Tulonaddhasikkhapadam 鋪蓋棉花(在床或長板凳上) (=Bhikkhu P 88)

164. Ya pana bhikkhuni mabcam va pitham va tulonaddham karapeyya, uddalanakam, pacittiyam.

任何 比丘尼 床 或 長板凳 或 棉花 包裝 使作 扯掉 犯懺悔 bhikkhuni mabca pitha tula+onaddha<nandh 綁 karapeti uddalanaka pacittiya f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. m.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. n. pp.(m.s.Acc.) caus.3s.opt. adj.(m.s.Acc.) m.s.Nom.

一六四、若比丘尼叫人鋪蓋棉花²在床或長板凳上,犯懺悔,而且棉花應拿掉。

164. Should any bhikkhuni have a bed or bench upholstered, it (the upholstery) is to be torn off and confessed.

165.Kanduppaticchadisikkhapadam 覆瘡衣(=Bhikkhu P 90)

165. Kanduppaticchadim pana bhikkhuniya karayamanaya pamanika karetabba.

疥癬 覆蓋 又 比丘尼 使製作 按照尺寸 應使作
 kandu+paticchadi bhikkhuni kareti pamanika kareti
 f. f.s.Acc. f.s.Ins. ppr.(m.s.Ins.) f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

一六五、當比丘尼叫人做覆瘡衣時,應該按照尺寸。這裡的尺寸是這樣:

Tatr'idam pamanam, dighaso catasso vidatthiyo Sugatavidatthiya tiriyam dve vidatthiyo.

這裡 這 尺寸 长 掌距 善浙 掌距 掌距 vidatthivo tatra pamana digha Sugata+vidatthi tiriya vidatthi f.p.Nom. adv. n.s.Nom. n.s.Nom. m.s.Abl. f.s.Gen. n.s.Acc. f.p.Nom.

長四善逝張手、寬二善逝張手,

Tam atikkamentiya, chedanakam, pacittiyam.

超過 切除 犯懺悔 atikkamaya chedanaka pacittiya m.s.Acc. adj.(f.s.Abl.) m.s.Acc. adj.(f.s.Nom.)

由於超過這(尺寸),犯懺悔,(而且超過的部份)應剪掉。

165. When a bhikkhuni is having a skin-eruption covering cloth made, it is to be made to the standard measurement. Here the standard is this: four spans — using the Sugata span — in length, two spans in width. In excess of that, it is to be cut down and confessed.

166.Nandasikkhapadam 難陀(比丘尼叫人做衣服超過善逝衣尺寸) (=Bhikkhu P 92)

166. Ya pana bhikkhuni Sugatacivarappamanam civaram karapeyya atirekam va, chedanakam,

任何 比丘尼 尺寸 使製作 切除 善逝 衣 衣 Sugata+civara+pamana civara bhikkhuni kareti atireka chedanaka f.s.Nom. f.s.Nom. n.s.Acc. n.s.Acc. caus.3s.opt. m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc.

一六六、若比丘尼叫人做衣服,(同於)善逝衣尺寸或超過,

¹《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1036.2):「若比丘尼,作繩床若木床,足應高佛八指,除入梐孔上,若截竟過者,波逸提。」

² tula,棉花。Paci.IV,170(CS:pg.220): 「棉花有三種──木棉、葛棉、草棉。」(cf. Vin. II,p.150)。

pacittiyam. Tatr'idam Sugatassa Sugatacivarappamanam, dighaso nava vidatthiyo

犯懺悔 這裡 這 善浙 善浙 衣 尺寸 長 digha pacittiva Sugata Sugata+civara+pamana vidatthi m. m.s.Abl. adj.(f.s.Nom.) adv. n.s.Nom. m.s.Gen. n. n.s.Nom. f.p.Nom.

犯懺悔,(而且超過的部份)應剪掉。這裡的善逝的善逝衣尺寸是這樣:

Sugatavidatthiya tiriyam cha vidatthiyo. Idam Sugatassa Sugatacivarappamananti.

衣 寬 六 掌距 這 善逝 善逝 Sugata+civara+pamana +ti Sugata+vidatthi tiriya vidatthiya Sugata f.s.Gen. n.s.Acc. f.p.Nom. m.s.Nom. m.s.Gen. m. n. n.s.Nom.

長九善逝張手、寬六善逝張手。這是善逝的善逝衣尺寸。

166. Should any bhikkhuni have a robe made the size of the Sugata robe or larger, it is to be cut down and confessed. Here, the size of the Sugata robe is this: nine spans — using the Sugata span — in length, six spans in width. This is the size of the Sugata's sugata robe.

~Dhammikavaggo solasamo nitthito.~

Uddittha kho, ayyayo, chasatthisata pacittiya dhamma.

諸大姐!一百六十六懺悔的規則已經誦出了。

The ladies, the one hundred sixty-six Rules entailing Expiation have been recited.

Tatth'ayyayo, pucchami: Kacci'ttha parisuddha?

這裡 諸大姐 我問 是否 於此 清淨 pucchati kacci ettha <pp. of parisujjhati adv. f.p.Acc. 1s.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

在這裡我問諸大姐:「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨?」

Herein I ask the ladies: Are you pure in this?

Dutiyam'pi pucchami: Kacci'ttha parisuddha?

第二 也 問 是否 是 清淨 dutiyam + api pucchati kacci + ettha <pp. of parisujjhati m.s.Acc. ind. 1s.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

第二次我再問:「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨?」

For the second times I ask the ladies: Are you pure in this?

Tatiyam'pi pucchami: Kacci'ttha parisuddha?

第三 也 問 是否 是 清淨 tatiyam + api pucchati kacci ettha <pp. of parisujjhati m.s.Acc. ind. 1s.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

第三次再問:「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨?」

For the third times I ask the ladies: Are you pure in this?

Parisuddh'etth'ayyayo, tasma tunhi, evam etam dharayami.

清淨 在此 大姐 因此 沈默 如此 這 認為 parisuddha + ettha tunhi evam eta dharati pp.(m.p.Nom.) adv. f.p.Nom. m.s.Abl. adv. adv. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr.

諸大姐於此(類戒)是清淨的,所以默然。我如此認定這件事。

The ladies are pure herein; that is why they are silent. So do I record it.

~Pacittiya nitthita.~

Patidesaniya 八應悔過戒(八提舍尼法)

Ime kho panayyayo attha patidesaniya dhamma uddesam agacchanti.

這些 又 大姐 八 應悔過、應認過 規則 誦 來 pana patideseti dhamma <uddesati agacchati m.p.Nom. adv. f.p.Voc. grd.(m.p.Nom.) m.p.Nom. m.s.Acc. 3p.pr.

諸大姐!現在到了誦出這八應悔過戒。

Now, the ladies, the Eight Rules that must be Confessed come up for recitation.

- *1.Sappivibbapanasikkhapadam(無病)索求酥
- 1. Ya pana bhikkhuni agilana sappim vibbapetva bhubjeyya, patidesetabbam taya bhikkhuniya

無病 應悔過 任何 告知 比丘尼 食 比丘尼 pana bhikkhuni a+gilana bhubjati ya sappi vibbapeti patidesetabbam bhikkhuni f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(f.s.Nom.) n.s.Nom. 3s.opt. grd. f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins.

- 一、若比丘尼,無病索求酥而食者,此比丘尼應悔過:
- 1. Should any bhikkhuni, not being ill, ask for ghee and consume it, she is to acknowledge it:

"garayham, ayye, dhammam apajjim asappayam patidesaniyam, tam patidesemi"ti.

卑賤的 犯、進入 無益的 大姐 法 應悔過 悔過 garayha dhamma apajji asappaya patidesaniya tam patidesemi adj.(m.s.Nom.) f.s.Voc. m.s.Nom. aor. adj.(m.s.Nom.) grd. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr.

「大姐!我犯卑賤的、無益的法而應悔過,我爲此悔過。」

"Lady, I have committed a blameworthy, unsuitable act that ought to be acknowledged. I acknowledge it." [1.~8. Bhikkhus' Pacittiya 39]

- *2.Telavibbapanasikkhapadam(無病)索求油
- 2. Ya pana bhikkhuni agilana telam vibbapetva bhubjeyya, patidesetabbam taya bhikkhuniya

任何 比丘尼 無 病 油 告知 食 應悔過 這 比丘尼 ya pana bhikkhuni a+gilana tela vibbapeti bhubjati patidesetabbam ta bhikkhuni f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj. (f.s.Nom.) n.s.Nom. caus.ger. 3s.opt. grd. f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins.

二、若比丘尼,無病索求油而食者,此比丘尼應悔過:

2. Should any bhikkhuni, not being ill, ask for oil and consume it, she is to acknowledge it:

"garayham, ayye, dhammam apajjim asappayam patidesaniyam, tam patidesemi"ti.

卑賤的 大姐 法 犯、進入 無益的 應悔過 此 悔渦 dhamma garayha patidesemi apajji asappaya patidesaniya tam adj.(m.s.Nom.) f.s.Voc. m.s.Nom. adj.(m.s.Nom.) aor. grd. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr.

「大姐!我犯卑賤的、無益的法而應悔過,我爲此悔過。」

"Lady, I have committed a blameworthy, unsuitable act that ought to be acknowledged. I acknowledge it."

*3.Madhuvibbapanasikkhapadam(無病)索求蜜

3. Ya pana bhikkhuni agilana madhum vibbapetva bhubjeyya, patidesetabbam taya bhikkhuniya

任何 比丘尼 無 病 蜜 告知 食 應悔過 這 比丘尼 ya pana bhikkhuni a+gilana madhu vibbapeti bhubjati patidesetabbam ta bhikkhuni f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(f.s.Nom.) n.s.Nom. ger. 3s.opt. grd. f.s.Ins.

三、若比丘尼,無病索求蜜而食者,此比丘尼應悔過:

3. Should any bhikkhuni, not being ill, ask for honey and consume it, she is to acknowledge it:

"garayham, ayye, dhammam apajjim asappayam patidesaniyam, tam patidesemi"ti.

犯、進入 卑賤的 大姐 法 無益的 應悔過 此 悔過 garayha dhamma apajji asappaya patidesaniya tam patidesemi adj.(m.s.Nom.) f.s.Voc. m.s.Nom. aor. adj.(m.s.Nom.) grd. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr.

「大姐!我犯卑賤的、無益的法而應悔過,我爲此悔過。」

"Lady, I have committed a blameworthy, unsuitable act that ought to be acknowledged. I acknowledge it."

*4.Phanitavibbapanasikkhapadam(無病)索求糖蜜

4. Ya pana bhikkhuni agilana phanitam vibbapetva bhubjeyya, patidesetabbam taya bhikkhuniya 任何 比丘尼 無 病 糖蜜、石蜜 告知 食 應悔過 這 比丘尼

ya pana bhikkhuni a+gilana phanita vibbapeti bhubjati patidesetabbam ta bhikkhuni f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(f.s.Nom.) n.s.Nom. ger. 3s.opt. grd. f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins.

四、若比丘尼,無病索求糖蜜而食者,此比丘尼應悔過:

4. Should any bhikkhuni, not being ill, ask for ugar/molasses and consume it, she is to acknowledge it:

"garayham, ayye, dhammam apajjim asappayam patidesaniyam, tam patidesemi"ti.

卑賤的 大姐 法 犯、進入 無益的 應悔過 悔過 此 garayha dhamma patidesaniya patidesemi apajji asappaya tam adj.(m.s.Nom.) f.s.Voc. m.s.Nom. aor. adj.(m.s.Nom.) grd. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr.

「大姐!我犯卑賤的、無益的法而應悔過,我爲此悔過。」

(p-c-e)Bhikkhunipatimokkha
"Lady, I have committed a blameworthy, unsuitable act that ought to be acknowledged. I acknowledge it."
*5.Macchavibbapanasikkhapadam(無病)索求魚肉

5. Ya pana bhikkhuni agilana maccham vibbapetva bhubjeyya, patidesetabbam taya bhikkhuniya 比丘尼 無病 魚(肉) 告知 應悔過 比丘尼 食 pana bhikkhuni a+gilana maccha vibbapeti bhubjati patidesetabbam bhikkhuni va ta f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Nom. ger. 3s.opt. f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins. grd.

五、若比丘尼,無病索求魚肉而食者,此比丘尼應悔過:

5. Should any bhikkhuni, not being ill, ask for fish and consume it, she is to acknowledge it:

"garayham, ayye, dhammam apajjim asappayam patidesaniyam, tam patidesemi"ti.

大姐 法 犯、進入 無益的 應悔過 此 悔渦 garayha dhamma apajji asappaya patidesaniya tam patidesemi adj.(m.s.Nom.) f.s.Voc. m.s.Nom. aor. adj.(m.s.Nom.) grd. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr.

「大姐!我犯卑賤的、無益的法而應悔過,我爲此悔過。」

"Lady, I have committed a blameworthy, unsuitable act that ought to be acknowledged. I acknowledge it."

*6.Mamsavibbapanasikkhapadam(無病)索求肉

6. Ya pana bhikkhuni agilana mamsam vibbapetva bhubjeyya, patidesetabbam taya bhikkhuniya 任何 比丘尼 無病 應悔過 比丘尼 肉 告知 食 pana bhikkhuni a+gilana mamsa vibbapeti bhubjati patidesetabbam bhikkhuni ya ta f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(f.s.Nom.) n.s.Nom. grd. ger. 3s.opt. f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins.

六、若比丘尼,無病索求肉而食者,此比丘尼應悔過:

6. Should any bhikkhuni, not being ill, ask for meat and consume it, she is to acknowledge it:

"garayham, ayye, dhammam apajjim asappayam patidesaniyam, tam patidesemi"ti.

卑賤的 大姐 犯、進入 無益的 應悔過 法 此 悔過 garayha dhamma apajji asappaya patidesaniya tam patidesemi adj.(m.s.Nom.) f.s.Voc. m.s.Nom. adj.(m.s.Nom.) m.s.Acc. 1s.pr. aor. grd.

「大姐!我犯卑賤的、無益的法而應悔過,我爲此悔過。」

"Lady, I have committed a blameworthy, unsuitable act that ought to be acknowledged. I acknowledge it."

*7.Khiravibbapanasikkhapadam(無病)索求乳

7. Ya pana bhikkhuni agilana khiram vibbapetva bhubjeyya, patidesetabbam taya bhikkhuniya 任何 比丘尼 無 病 乳 告知 食 應悔過 這 比丘尼

任何 比丘尼 無 病 乳 告知 食 應悔過 這 比丘尼 ya pana bhikkhuni a+gilana khira vibbapeti bhubjati patidesetabbam ta bhikkhuni f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(f.s.Nom.) n.s.Nom. ger. 3s.opt. grd. f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins.

七、若比丘尼,無病索求乳而食者,此比丘尼應悔過:

7. Should any bhikkhuni, not being ill, ask for milk and consume it, she is to acknowledge it:

"garayham, ayye, dhammam apajjim asappayam patidesaniyam, tam patidesemi"ti.

卑賤的 大姐 犯、進入 無益的 法 應悔過 此 悔過 garayha patidesaniva patidesemi dhamma apajji asappaya tam adj.(m.s.Nom.) f.s.Voc. m.s.Nom. adj.(m.s.Nom.) aor. grd. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr.

「大姐!我犯卑賤的、無益的法而應悔過,我爲此悔過。」

"Lady, I have committed a blameworthy, unsuitable act that ought to be acknowledged. I acknowledge it."

*8.Dadhivibbapanasikkhapadam(無病)索求酪

8. Ya pana bhikkhuni agilana dadhim vibbapetva bhubjeyya, patidesetabbam taya bhikkhuniya

任何 比丘尼 無 病 酪 告知 食 應悔過 這 比丘尼 ya pana bhikkhuni a+gilana dadhi vibbapeti bhubjati patidesetabbam ta bhikkhuni f.s.Nom. adv. f.s.Nom. adj.(f.s.Nom.) n.s.Nom. ger. 3s.opt. grd. f.s.Ins. f.s.Ins.

八、若比丘尼,無病索求酪而食者,此比丘尼應悔過:

8. Should any bhikkhuni, not being ill, ask for curds and consume it, she is to acknowledge it:

"garayham, ayye, dhammam apajjim asappayam patidesaniyam, tam patidesemi"ti.

卑賤的 大姐 犯、進入 無益的 應悔過 此 法 悔過 garayha dhamma apajji patidesemi asappaya patidesaniya tam adj.(m.s.Nom.) f.s.Voc. m.s.Nom. aor. adj.(m.s.Nom.) grd. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr.

「大姐!我犯卑賤的、無益的法而應悔過,我爲此悔過。」

"Lady, I have committed a blameworthy, unsuitable act that ought to be acknowledged. I acknowledge it."

Uddittha kho, ayyayo, attha patidesaniya dhamma.

iii 大姐 八 悔過 規則 uddisati dhamma pp.(m.p.Nom.) f.p.Voc. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom.

諸大姐!八悔過的規則已經誦出了。

The ladies, Eight Rules that must be Confessed have been recited.

Tatthayyayo, pucchami: Kacci'ttha parisuddha?

這裡 諸大姐 我問 是否 於此 清淨 tattha pucchati kacci ettha pp. of parisujjhati adv. f.p.Acc. 1s.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

在這裡我問諸大姐:「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨?」

Herein I ask the ladies: Are you pure in this?

Dutiyam 'pi pucchami: Kacci'ttha parisuddha?

第二 也 問 是否 於此 清淨 dutiyam + api pucchati kacci ettha pp. of parisujjhati m.s.Acc. ind. ls.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

第二次我再問:「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨?」

For the second times I ask the ladies: Are you pure in this?

Tatiyam 'pi pucchami: Kacci 'ttha parisuddha?

第三 也 問 是否 於此 清淨 tatiyam + api pucchati kacci ettha pp. of parisujjhati m.s.Acc. ind. ls.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

第三次再問:「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨?」

For the third times I ask the ladies: Are you pure in this?

Parisuddh'etth 'ayyayo, tasma tunhi, evam etam dharayamiti.

清淨 因此 如此 在此 沈默 認爲 parisuddha + ettha tunhi dharati +ti evam eta pp.(m.p.Nom.) adv. f.p.Nom. m.s.Abl. adv. adv. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr.

諸大姐於此(類戒)是清淨的,所以默然。我如此認定這件事。

The ladies are pure herein; that is why they are silent. So do I record it.

~Patidesaniya nitthita.~

Sekhiya 應當學習的戒(=Bhikkhu sekhiya 1~75)

Ime kho panayyayo, sekhiya dhamma uddesam agacchanti.

這些 又 大姐 學習 規則 誦 來 pana+ayyayo dhamma uddesati agacchati adv. f.p.Voc. adj.(m.p.Nom.) m.p.Nom. m.s.Acc. 3p.pr.

諸大姐!現在到了誦出這些應當學習的戒。

Now, the ladies, the Rules of Training come up for recitation.

Parimandalavaggopathamo 圓整品第一

- 1.~2.Parimandalasikkhapadam 圓整(穿內裙)
- 1. Parimandalam nivasessami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

圓 完全穿內裙學習應該parimandalanivasetisikkhakarotim.s.Acc.1s.fut.f.s.Nom.grd.(f.s.Nom.)

「我要圓整地整齊穿好(內裙)」,應當學。

- 1.I will wear the lower robe wrapped around (me): a training to be observed.
- 2. Parimandalam parupissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

圓 完全 穿上衣 學習 應該 parimandala parupati sikkha karoti m.s.Acc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

「我要圓整地整齊穿好(上衣)」,應當學。

- 2.I will wear the upper robe wrapped around (me): a training to be observed.
- 3.~4.Suppaticchannasikkhapadam 整齊包好(衣服)
 - 3. Supaticchanna antaraghare gamissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

好包覆內屋我去學應該su+<paticchadeti</td>antara+gharagacchatisikkhakarotipp.(f.s.Nom.)m. n.s.Loc.1s.fut.f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

- 三、「在住宅區,我要包好(衣服)走」,應當學。
- 3. I will go well-covered in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.
- 4. Suppaticchanna antaraghare nisidissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

好 包覆 內 屋 我坐 學 應該
su+paticchadeti antara+ghara nisidati sikkha karoti
pp.(f.s.Nom.) m. n.s.Loc. ls.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

四、「在住宅區1,我要包好(衣服)坐」,應當學。

- 4. I will sit well-covered in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.
- 5.~6.Susamvutasikkhapadam.守護威儀
 - 5. Susamvuta antaraghare gamissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

好防護内屋 我去 學 應該 su+samvarati antara+ghara gacchati sikkha karoti pp.(f.s.Nom.) m. n.s.Loc. ls.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

五、「在住宅區,我要好好守護(威儀)走」,應當學。

5. I will go well-restrained in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

¹ Paci.IV,176 (CS:pg.228):「**住宅區**:有車道、群衆、十字路、住家。」

6. Susamvuta antaraghare nisidissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

好防護內屋 我坐 學 應該 su+samvarati antara+ghara nisidati sikkha karoti pp.(f.s.Nom.) m. n.s.Loc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

六、「在住宅區,我要好好守護(威儀)坐」,應當學。

6. I will sit well-restrained in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

7.~8.Okkhittacakkhusikkhapadam 垂目而視

7. Okkhittacakkhuni antaraghare gamissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
下垂 眼睛  內 屋  我去  學  應該
okkhipati+cakkhu antara+ghara gacchati
pp.(f.s.Nom.) m. n.s.Loc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

七、「在住宅區,我要垂目而視走」,應當學。

7. I will go with eyes lowered in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

8. Okkhittacakkhuni antaraghare nisidissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
下垂 眼睛  內 屋  我坐  學  應該
okkhipati+cakkhu antara+ghara nisidati sikkha karoti
pp.(f.s.Nom.) m. n.s.Loc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

八、「在住宅區,我要垂目而視坐」,應當學。

8. I will sit with eyes lowered in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

9.~10.Ukkhittakasikkhapadam 不拉高(衣服)

9. Na ukkhittakaya antaraghare gamissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
不 拉高 内 屋 我去 學 應該
ukkhittaka antara+ghara gacchati sikkha karoti
n.s.Dat. m. n.s.Loc. futs.1s.pr. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

九、「在住宅區,我不要拉高(衣服)走」,應當學。

9. I will not go with robes hitched up in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

10. Na ukkhittakaya antaraghare nisidissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

不 拉高 内 屋 我去 學 應該
ukkhittaka antara+ghara nisidati sikkha karoti
n.s.Dat. m. n.s.Loc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

十、「在住宅區,我不要拉高(衣服)坐」,應當學。1

10. I will not sit with robes hitched up in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

~Parimandalavaggo pathamo nitthito.~

 $^{^1}$ 《四分比丘尼戒本》(T22.1039.1):「不得反抄衣入白衣舍坐應當學」「不得反抄衣入白衣舍坐應當學」。

Ujjagghikavaggodutiyo 大笑品第二

11.~14.Ujjagghikasikkhapadam 大笑

11. Na ujjagghikaya antaraghare gamissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
不 大笑 內屋 我去 學 應該
ujjagghika antara+ghara gacchati sikha karoti
f.s.Dat. m. n.s.Loc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

十一、「在住宅區,我不要大笑¹走」,應當學。

11. I will not go laughing loudly in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

12. Na ujjagghikaya antaraghare nisidissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
下 大笑 內 屋 我去 學 應該
ujjagghika antara+ghara nisidati sikkha karoti
f.s.Dat. m. n.s.Loc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

十二、「在住宅區,我不要大笑坐」,應當學。

12. I will not sit laughing loudly in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

Uccasaddasikkhapadam 大聲戒

13. Appasadda antaraghare gamissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
小 聲音 內 屋 我去 學 應該
appa+sadda antara+ghara gacchati sikkha karoti
f.s.Nom. m. n.s.Loc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

十三、「在住宅區,我要小聲(談話)走」,應當學。

13. I will go (speaking) with a lowered voice in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

14. Appasadda antaraghare nisidissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
小 聲音   內   屋   我去   學   應該
appa+sadda antara+ghara nisidati sikkha karoti
f.s.Nom. m. n.s.Loc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

十四、「我要小聲(談話)坐」,應當學。

14. I will sit (speaking) with a lowered voice in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

15.~16.Kayappacalakasikkhapadam 不晃動身體

15. Na kayappacalakam antaraghare gamissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
不 身體 搖晃 內屋 我去 學 應該
kaya+pacalaka antara+ghara gacchati sikkha karoti
m. n.s.Nom. m. n.s.Loc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

十五、「在住宅區,我不要搖晃身體走」,應當學。

15. I will not go swinging my body in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

 $^{^1}$ 笑有六種:1.sita,面部表情顯露出笑。2.hasita,輕微移動嘴唇,露出牙端而笑。3.vihasita,笑出聲。4.upahasita,笑得頭、肩、臂振動。5.apahasita,笑得掉下淚水。6.atihasita,暴笑得整個身體前後振動。1~2 爲比丘被允許的笑,3~6 則屬於大笑,不被聖法律所允許。

16. Na kayappacalakam antaraghare nisidissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

身體 搖晃 內屋 我坐 學 應該
kaya+pacalaka antara+ghara nisidati sikkha karoti
m. n.s.Nom. m. n.s.Loc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

十六、「在住宅區,我不要搖晃身體坐」,應當學。

16. I will not sit swinging my body in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

17.~18.Bahuppacalakasikkhapadam 不揮擺手臂

17. Na bahuppacalakam antaraghare gamissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

不 手臂 搖擺 內 屋 我去 學 應該 bahu + pacalaka antara+ghara gacchati sikkha karoti m. n.s.Nom. m. n.s.Loc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

十七、「在住宅區,我不要揮擺手臂走」,應當學。

17. I will not go swinging my arms in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

18. Na bahuppacalakam antaraghare nisidissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

不 手臂 搖擺 內 屋 我坐 學 應該
bahu+pacalaka antara+ghara nisidati sikkha karoti
m. n.s.Nom. m. n.s.Loc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

十八、「在住宅區,我不要擺動手臂坐」,應當學。

18. I will not sit swinging my arms in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

19.~20.Sisappacalakasikkhapadam 搖頭晃腦

19. Na sisappacalakam antaraghare gamissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

不 頭 搖晃 內 屋 我去 學 應該
sisa+pacalaka antara+ghara gacchati sikkha karoti
n. n.s.Nom. m. n.s.Loc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

十九、「在住宅區,我不要搖頭晃腦走」,應當學。

19. I will not go swinging my head in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

20. Na sisappacalakam antaraghare nisidissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

不 頭 搖晃 內 屋 我坐 學 應該
sisa+pacalaka antara+ghara nisidati sikkha karoti
n. n.s.Nom. m. n.s.Loc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

二十、「在住宅區,我不要搖頭晃腦坐」,應當學。

20. I will not sit swinging my head in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

~Ujjagghikavaggo dutiyo nitthito.~

Khambhakatavaggotatiyo 扠腰品第三

21.~22.Khambhakatasikkhapadam 扠腰

21. Na khambhakata antaraghare gamissamiti sikkha karaniya.

```
不 支撐 做 內 屋 我去 學 應該 khambha+kata antara+ghara gacchati sikkha karoti pp.(f.s.Nom.) m. n.s.Loc. ls.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

- 二一、「在住宅區,我不要扠腰走」,應當學。
- 21. I will not go with arms akimbo in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.
- 22. Na khambhakata antaraghare nisidissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
不 支撐 做 內 屋 我坐 學 應該
khambha+kata antara+ghara nisidati sikkha karoti
pp.(m.s.Nom.) m. n.s.Loc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

- 二二、「在住宅區,我不要撐著頭坐」,應當學。
- 22. I will not sit with arms akimbo in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

23.~24.Ogunthitasikkhapadam 包著頭

23. Na ogunthita antaraghare gamissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
不 包覆 內 屋 我去 學 應該
<oguntheti antara+ghara gacchati sikkha karoti
pp.(f.s.Nom.) m. n.s.Loc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

- 二三、「在住宅區,我不要包著(頭)走」,應當學。
- 23. I will not go with my head covered in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.
- 24. Na ogunthita antaraghare nisidissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
不 包覆 內 屋 我坐 學 應該
<oguntheti antara+ghara nisidati sikkha karoti
pp.(m.s.Nom.) m. n.s.Loc. ls.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

- 二四、「在住宅區,我不要包著(頭)坐」,應當學。
- 24. I will not sit with my head covered in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

25.Ukkutikasikkhapadam 以腳尖或腳踵

25. Na ukkutikaya antaraghare gamissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
不 腳尖 內 屋 我去 學 應該

ukkutika antara+ghara gacchati sikkha karoti
m.s.Dat. m. n.s.Loc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

- 二五、「在住宅區,我不要以腳尖或腳踵走」,應當學。
- 25. I will not go tiptoeing or walking just on the heels in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.

26.Pallatthikasikkhapadam 抱住膝蓋

26. Na pallatthikaya antaraghare nisidissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

不 抱住膝蓋 內 屋 我坐 學 應該
pallatthika antara+ghara nisidati sikkha karoti
f.s.Dat. m. n.s.Loc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

- 二六、「在住宅區,我不要抱住膝蓋坐」,應當學。
- 26. I will not sit clasping the knees in inhabited areas: a training to be observed.
- 27.Sakkaccapatiggahanasikkhapadam 感激接受
- 27. Sakkaccam pindapatam patiggahessami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

感激 鉢食 我接受 學 應該 sakkacca pindapata patiggahati sikkha karoti ger.(m.s.Acc.) m.s.Acc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

- 二七、「我要心存感激地接受食物」,應當學。
- 27. I will receive almsfood appreciatively: a training to be observed.
- 28.Pattasabbinipatiggahanasikkhapadam 注視缽接受
- 28. Pattasabbi pindapatam patiggahessami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

鉢注意鉢食我接受學應該patta+sabbinpindapatapatiggahatisikkhakarotim. m.s.Nom.m.s.Acc.1s.fut.f.s.Nom.grd.(f.s.Nom.)

- 二八、「我要注視著缽接受食物」,應當學。
- 28. I will receive almsfood with attention focused on the bowl: a training to be observed.
- 29.Samasupakapatiggahanasikkhapadam 接受成比例的羹飯
- 29. Samasupakam pindapatam patiggahessami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

等(比例) 羹 鉢食 我接受 學 應該 sama + supaka pindapata patiggahati sikkha karoti m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

- 二九、「我要接受與食物成比例的羹」,應當學。
- 29. I will receive almsfood with bean curry in proper proportion: a training to be observed.
- 30.Samatittikasikkhapadam 相等(缽)邊緣
 - 30. Samatittikam pindapatam patiggahessami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

相等(缽)邊緣 缽食 我接受 學 應該 samatittika pindapata patiggahati sikkha karoti adj.(m.s.Acc.) m.s.Acc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

- 三十、「我要接受食物(只)齊缽緣(內)」,應當學。
- 30. I will receive almsfood level with the edge (of the bowl): a training to be observed.

¹ Paci.IV,190 (CS:pg.249):「羹(supakam):有兩種,綠豆(mugga)羹、蠶豆(masa)羹。」

~Khambhakatavaggo tatiyo nitthito.~

Sakkaccavaggocatuttho 感激品第四

- 31.Sakkaccabhubjanasikkhapadam 感激
 - 31. Sakkaccam pindapatam bhubjissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
感激 鉢食 我吃 學 應該 sakkacca pindapata bhubjati sikkha karoti ger.(m.s.Acc.) m.s.Acc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

- 三一、「我要心存感激地吃飯」,應當學。
- 31. I will eat almsfood appreciatively: a training to be observed.
- 32.Pattasabbinibhubjanasikkhapadam 注視缽吃
 - 32. Pattasabbi pindapatam bhubjissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
鉢注意鉢食我吃學應該patta+sabbinpindapatabhubjatisikkhakarotim.m.s.Acc.m.s.Acc.1s.fut.f.s.Nom.grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

- 三二、「我要注視著缽吃飯」,應當學。
- 32. I will eat almsfood with attention focused on the bowl: a training to be observed.
- 33.Sapadanasikkhapadam 順序地(用餐)
 - 33. Sapadanam pindapatam bhubjissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
順序 鉢食 我吃 學 應該 sapadana pindapata bhubjati sikkha karoti adj.(m.s.Acc.) m.s.Acc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

- 三三、「我要順序(不挑東挑西)地用餐」,應當學。
- 33. I will eat almsfood methodically: a training to be observed.
- 34.Samasupakasikkhapadam 等(比例)菜
 - 34. Samasupakam pindapatam bhubjissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
等(比例) 菜 鉢食 我吃 學 應該 sama+supaka pindapata bhubjati sikkha karoti m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. ls.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

- 三四、「我要成比例地吃飯與(四分之一的)菜」,應當學。
- 34. I will eat almsfood with bean curry in proper proportion: a training to be observed.
- 35.Nathupakatasikkhapadam 不從頂端揉捏食物而吃
 - 35. Na thupato omadditva pindapatam bhubjissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
不頂端 揉捏 鉢食 我吃 學 應該
thupa omaddati pindapata bhubjati sikkha karoti
m.s.Abl. ger. m.s.Acc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

- 三五、「我不(將缽內食物做成塔形而)從頂端揉揑食物來吃」,應當學。
- 35. I will not eat almsfood taking mouthfuls from a heap: a training to be observed.

36.Odanappaticchadanasikkhapadam 覆藏飯

36. Na supam va byabjanam va odanena paticchadessami bhiyyokamyatam upadaya'ti,

不菜	或佐料	或 飯	覆藏	更多 想要	因於
supa	bya b jana	odana	paticchadati	bhiyyo+kamyata	upadaya
m.s.Acc.	n.s.Acc.	m.n.s.Ins.	1s.fut.	adj. m.s.Acc.	ger.adv.

sikkha karaniya.

```
學 應該
sikkha karoti
f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

三六、「我不用飯蓋住菜或佐料,以求更多的(菜或佐料)」,應當學。

36. I will not hide bean curry and foods with rice out of a desire to get more: a training to be observed.

37.Supodanavibbattisikkhapadam 要求飯菜

37. Na supam va odanam va agilana attano atthaya vibbapetva bhubjissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
不
                         或 無病 自己
                                            需要、利益
                                                          要求
                                                                    食用
                                                                                         應該
                         a+gilana
                                                                   bhubjati
    supa
              odana
                                    attan
                                             attha
                                                       vibbapeti
                                                                                 sikkha
                                                                                        karoti
                        f.s.Nom. m.s.Gen.
                                                                   1s.fut.
  m.s.Acc.
            m.s.Acc.
                                            m.s.Dat.
                                                          ger.
                                                                             f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

- 三七、「無病時,我不要爲了自己的需要(主動)要求菜或飯來吃」,應當學。
- 37. Not being ill, I will not eat rice or bean curry that I have requested for my own sake: a training to be observed.
- 38.Ujjhanasabbinisikkhapadam 心存不滿(注意他人的缽)
- 38. Na ujihanasabbi paresam pattam olokessami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
不不滿 想 其他 缽 注視 學 應該
ujjhana+sabbin para patta oloketi sikkha karoti
n. m.s.Nom. m.p.Gen. m.s.Acc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

- 三八、「我不心存不滿而看注意別人的缽」,應當學。
- 38. I will not look at another's bowl intent on finding fault: a training to be observed.
- 39.Kabalasikkhapadam(不做過大的)飯糰
 - 39. Natimahantam kavalam karissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
不 過大 飯糰 作 學 應該
na+atimahanta kavala karoti adj.(m.s.Acc.) m.s.Acc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

三九、「我不要做過大的飯糰」,應當學。

39. I will not take an extra-large mouthful: a training to be observed.

40.Alopasikkhapadam 一□(食物)

40. Parimandalam alopam karissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

圓的 一口(食物) 做 學 應該
parimandala alopa karoti sikkha karoti
m.s.Acc. m.s.Acc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

四十、「我要做圓的飯糰」,應當學。

40. I will make a rounded mouthful: a training to be observed.

~Sakkaccavaggo catuttho nitthito.~

Kabalavaggopabcamo 飯糰品第五

41.Anahatasikkhapadam 未拿來(張口待食)

kavale 41. Na anahate mukhadvaram vivarissami'ti, sikkha karaniya. 嘴 不 未拿來 飯糰 打開 an+aharati kavala(=kabala) sikkha mukha+dvara vivarati karoti pp.(m.s.Loc.) m.n.s.Loc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.) n. n.s.Acc.

四一、「我不要飯糰未送至(嘴吧)時就張開口」,應當學。

41. I will not open the mouth when the mouthful has yet to be brought to it: a training to be observed.

42.Bhubjamanasikkhapadam 食時(勿放整個手指入嘴)

42. Na bhubjamana sabbam hattham mukhe pakkhipissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
不吃時 全部 手(指) 嘴 放入 學 應該 bhubjati sabba hattha mukha pakkhipati sikkha karoti ppr.(f.s.Nom.) adj.(m.s.Acc.) m.s.Acc. n.s.Loc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

四二、「我(送)食時不要放整個手指進入嘴裡」,應當學。

42. I will not insert the whole hand into the mouth while eating: a training to be observed.

43.Sakabalasikkhapadam 含飯糰(說話)

43. Na sakavalena mukhena byaharissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
不 含有 飯糰 嘴 說話 學 應該 sa+kavala mukha vyaharati sikkha karoti m.n.s.Ins. n.s.Ins. ls.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

四三、「我不要口含飯糰說話」,應當學。

43. I will not speak with the mouth full of food: a training to be observed.

44.Pindukkhepakasikkhapadam 投入食物(入口)

44. Na pindukkhepakam bhubjissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
不食物 投入 我吃 學 應該 pinda+ukkhepaka bhubjati sikkha karoti m. m.s.Acc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

四四、「我不要以投擲食物(入口的方式)來吃」,應當學。

44. I will not eat from lifted balls of food: a training to be observed.

- 45.Kabalavacchedakasikkhapadam 咬斷飯糰
 - 45. Na kavalavacchedakam bhubjissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

不 飯糰 咬斷 我吃 學 應該
kavala+ava-chedaka bhubjati sikkha karoti
m.n. m.s.Acc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

四五、「我不要咬斷飯糰來吃」,應當學。

- 45. I will not eat nibbling at mouthfuls of food: a training to be observed.
- 46.Avagandakarakasikkhapadam(大口)張頰(吃)
- 46. Na avagandakarakam bhubjissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

不 膨脹 做 我吃 學 應該
ava-ganda-karaka bhubjati sikkha karoti
m.s.Acc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

四六、「我不要(大口)張頰來吃」,應當學。

- 46. I will not eat stuffing out the cheeks: a training to be observed.
- 47.Hatthaniddhunakasikkhapadam 甩手地(吃)
- 47. Na hatthaniddhunakam bhubjissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

不 手 甩 我吃 學 應該
hattha+niddhunaka bhubjati sikkha karoti
m. m.s.Acc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

四七、「我不要甩手地吃」,應當學。

- 47. I will not eat shaking (food off) the hand: a training to be observed.
- 48.Sitthavakarakasikkhapadam 飯粒散落
- 48. Na sitthavakarakam bhubjissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

不 飯粒 散落 我吃 學 應該 sittha+avakaraka bhubjati sikkha karoti n. m.s.Acc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

四八、「我要不散落飯粒地吃」,應當學。

- 48. I will not eat scattering lumps of rice about: a training to be observed.
- 49.Jivhaniccharakasikkhapadam 舌頭伸出
- 49. Na jivhaniccharakam bhubjissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

不 舌頭 伸出 我吃 學 應該 jivha+niccharati bhubjati sikkha karoti f. m.s.Acc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

四九、「我不要伸出舌頭地吃」,應當學。

49. I will not eat sticking out the tongue: a training to be observed.

50.Capucapukarakasikkhapadam 作咀嚼聲

50. Na capucapukarakam bhubjissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
不 咀嚼聲 作 我吃 學 應該 capu+capu+karaka bhubjati sikkha karoti m.s.Acc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

五十、「我不要咀嚼出聲地吃」,應當學。

50. I will not eat smacking the lips: a training to be observed.

~Kabalavaggo pabcamo nitthito.~

Surusuruvaggochattho 囌囌品第六

- 51.Surusurukarakasikkhapadam(吃時)作囌囌聲
- 51. Na surusurukarakam bhubjissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
不 囌囌聲 作 我吃 學 應該
suru+suru+karaka bhubjati sikkha karoti
adv.(m.s.Acc.) 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

五一、「我不要囌囌吸吮出聲地吃」,應當學。

- 51. I will not eat making a slurping noise: a training to be observed.
- 52.Hatthanillehakasikkhapadam 舔手(吃)
 - 52. Na hatthanillehakam bhubjissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
不 手 舔 我吃 學 應該
hattha+<nillehati bhubjati sikkha karoti
m. m.n.s.Acc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

五二、「我不要舔著手地吃」,應當學。

- 52. I will not eat licking the hands: a training to be observed.
- 53.Pattanillehakasikkhapadam 不舔缽
 - 53. Na pattanillehakam bhubjissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
不 缽 舔 我吃 學 應該
patta+<nillehati bhubjati sikkha karoti
m. m.n.s.Acc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

五三、「我不要舔著缽吃」,應當學。

- 53. I will not eat licking the bowl: a training to be observed.
- 54.Otthanillehakasikkhapadam 不舔嘴唇
- 54. Na otthanillehakam bhubjissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
不 嘴唇 舔 我吃 學 應該
ottha+<nillehati bhubjati sikkha karoti
m.n.s.Acc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

五四、「我不舔著嘴唇吃」,應當學。

54. I will not eat licking the lips: a training to be observed.

55.Samisasikkhapadam 沾過食物(的手)

55. Na samisena hatthena paniyathalakam patiggahessami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
不有食物 手 可喝的 水瓶 拿取 學 應該 sa + amisa hattha paniya+thalaka patigganhati sikkha karoti n.s.Ins. m.s.Ins. adj. n.s.Acc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

五五、「我不要用沾過食物的手來拿飲水瓶」,應當學。

55. I will not accept a water vessel with a hand soiled by food: a training to be observed.

56.Sasitthakasikkhapadam 含飯粒(任意倒棄)

56. Na sasitthakam pattadhovanam antaraghare chaddessamiti sikkha karaniya.

五六、「我不要將含著飯粒的洗缽水倒棄」,應當學。

56. I will not, in an inhabited area, throw away bowl-rinsing water that has grains of rice in it: a training to be observed.

57.Chattapanisikkhapadam 手(拿)遮陽傘

57. Na chattapanissa agilanassa dhammam desissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
不 遮陽傘 手 無 病 法 開示 學 應該 chatta + pani a+gilana dhamma deseti sikkha karoti n. m.s.Dat. m.s.Dat. m.s.Acc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

五七、「我不要對無病而手(拿)遮陽傘的人說法」,應當學。

57. I will not teach Dhamma to a person with an umbrella in her hand who is not ill: a training to be observed.

58.Dandapanisikkhapadam 手(拿)拐杖

58. Na dandapanissa agilanassa dhammam desissami' ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
不
     枴杖
                      無
                                       法
  danda + pani
                     a+gilana
                                    dhamma
                                                                  sikkha
                                                  deseti
                                                                              karoti
                     m.s.Dat.
                                   m.s.Acc.
                                                  1s.fut.
                                                                 f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
    m
         m s Dat
```

五八、「我不要對無病而手(拿)拐杖的人說法」,應當學。

58. I will not teach Dhamma to a person with a staff in her hand who is not ill: a training to be observed.

59.Satthapanisikkhapadam 手(拿)刀

59. Na satthapanissa agilanassa dhammam desissami' ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
不
              手
                          病
                                        法
                                                   開示
                                                                            應該
    sattha+pani
                                                                sikkha
                    a+gilana
                                 dhamma
                                                 deseti
                                                                            karoti
     n. m.s.Dat.
                      m.s.Dat.
                                  m.s.Acc.
                                                 1s.fut.
                                                               f.s.Nom.
                                                                         grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

五九、「我不要對無病而手(拿)刀的人說法」,應當學。

59. I will not teach Dhamma to a person with a knife in her hand who is not ill: a training to be observed.

60.Avudhapanisikkhapadam 手(拿)武器

60. Na avudhapanissa agilanassa dhammam desissami' ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
不 武器 拿 無 病 法 開示 學 應該
avudha+pani a+gilana dhamma deseti sikkha karoti
n. m.s.Dat. m.s.Dat. m.s.Acc. ls.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

六十、「我不要對無病而手(拿)武器的人說法」,應當學。

60. I will not teach Dhamma to a person with a weapon in her hand who is not ill: a training to be observed.

~Surusuruvaggo chattho nitthito.~

Padukavaggosattamo 涼鞋品第七

- 61.Padukasikkhapadam 穿涼鞋
 - 61. Na padukarulhassa agilanassa dhammam desissami' ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
不 涼鞋 穿 無 病 法 開示 學 應該
paduka+arulha a+gilana dhamma deseti sikkha karoti
f. pp.(m.s.Dat.) m.s.Dat. m.s.Acc. ls.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

六一、「我不要對無病而穿涼鞋的人說法」,應當學。

- 61. will not teach Dhamma to a person wearing non-leather footwear who is not ill: a training to be observed.
- 62.Upahanasikkhapadam 穿鞋子
- 62. Na upahanarulhassa agilanassa dhammam desissami' ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
不
     鞋子
                                病
                                              法
                                                           開示
                                                                                    應該
    upahana+arulha
                           a+gilana
                                                                        sikkha
                                          dhamma
                                                       deseti
                                                                                    karoti
           pp.(m.s.Dat.)
                            m.s.Dat.
                                         m.s.Acc.
                                                       1s.fut.
                                                                       f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

六二、「我不對無病而穿鞋子的人說法」,應當學。

- 62. I will not teach Dhamma to a person wearing leather footwear who is not ill: a training to be observed.
- 63. Yanasikkhapadam 坐在車上
- 63. Na yanagatassa agilanassa dhammam desissami' ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
車
                          病
                                     法
                                                    開示
yana+gata
                                                    deseti
                                                                     sikkha
                    a+gilana
                                   dhamma
                                                                                karoti
  m.s.Dat.
                     m.s.Dat.
                                                   1s.fut.
                                                                   f.s.Nom.
                                   m.s.Acc.
                                                                            grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

六三、「我不要對無病而坐在車上的人說法」,應當學。

63. I will not teach Dhamma to a person in a vehicle who is not ill: a training to be observed.

64.Sayanasikkhapadam 躺在床上

64. Na sayanagatassa agilanassa dhammam desissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
不 床 躺 無 病 法 開示 學 應該
sayana + gata a+gilana dhamma deseti sikkha karoti
n. m.s.Dat. m.s.Dat. m.s.Acc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

六四、「我不要對無病而躺在床上的人說法」,應當學。

64. I will not teach Dhamma to a person lying down who is not ill: a training to be observed.

65.Pallatthikasikkhapadam 抱住膝蓋坐著

65. Na pallatthikaya nisinnassa agilanassa dhammam desissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
抱住膝蓋
                                       病
                                                  法
                                                                開示
                   nisidati
                                                                                sikkha
pallatthika
                                  a+gilana
                                                 dhamma
                                                                deseti
                                                                                            karoti
f.s.Dat.
                pp.(m.s.Dat.)
                                   m.s.Dat.
                                                 m.s.Acc.
                                                              1s.fut.
                                                                               f.s.Nom.
                                                                                         grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

六五、「我不要對無病而抱住膝蓋坐著的人說法」,應當學。

65. I will not teach Dhamma to a person who sits clasping her knees and who is not ill: a training to be observed.

66.Vethitasikkhapadam 綁頭巾

66. Na vetthitasisassa agilanassa dhammam desissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
纏繞
                           病
                                      法
                                                  開示
                     a+gilana
                                                  deseti
                                                                  sikkha
                                                                               karoti
vetthita+ sisa
                                    dhamma
                     m.s.Dat.
                                                  1s.fut.
                                                                  f.s.Nom.
                                                                             grd.(f.s.Nom.)
  pp. n.s.Dat.
                                    m.s.Acc.
```

六六、「我不要對無病而綁頭巾的人說法」,應當學。

66. I will not teach Dhamma to a person wearing headgear who is not ill: a training to be observed.

67.Ogunthitasikkhapadam 包住頭

67. Na ogunthitasisassa agilanassa dhammam desissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
不 包覆 頭 無 病 法 開示 學 應該
ogunthita + sisa a+gilana dhamma deseti sikkha karoti
pp. n.s.Dat. m.s.Dat. m.s.Acc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

六七、「我不對無病而包住頭的人說法」,應當學。

67. I will not teach Dhamma to a person whose head is covered (with a robe or scarf) and who is not ill: a training to be observed.

68.Chamasikkhapadam 坐位子

68. Na chamayam nisiditva asane nisinnassa agilanassa dhammam desissami'ti,

```
不
       地上
                     华
                                         华
                                                                       法
                                                                                     開示
     chama
                 nisidati
                                       nisinna
                                                                   dhamma
                                                                                   deseti
                             asana
                                                   a+gilana
                            n.s.Loc.
     f.s.Loc.
                                       m.s.Dat.
                                                    m.s.Dat.
                                                                   m.s.Acc.
                                                                                    1s.fut.
                  ger.
```

sikkha karaniya.

```
學 應該
sikkha karoti
f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

六八、「我坐在地上時,不要對無病而坐在位子的人說法」,應當學。

68. Sitting on the ground, I will not teach Dhamma to a person sitting on a seat who is not ill: a training to be observed.

69.Nicasanasikkhapadam 坐高位

69. Na nice asane nisiditva ucce asane nisinnassa agilanassa dhammam desissami'ti,

```
不 低處
                                            华位.
                                                        44
        nica
               asana
                        nisidati
                                    ucca
                                            asana
                                                      nisinna
                                                                 a+gilana
                                                                               dhamma
                                                                                            deseti
adj.(n.s.Loc.) n.s.Loc. ger. adj.(m.s.Loc.) m.s.Loc. m.s.Dat.
                                                                 m.s.Dat.
                                                                               m.s.Acc.
                                                                                             1s.fut.
```

sikkha karaniya.

學 應該 sikkha karoti f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

- 六九、「我坐在低的位子時,不要對無病而坐在高的位子的人說法」,應當學。應 當學。
- 69. Sitting on a low seat, I will not teach Dhamma to a person sitting on a high seat who is not ill: a training to be observed.

70.~71.Thitasikkhapadam 坐著

70. Na thita nisinnassa agilanassa dhammam desissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
不 站 坐 無 病 法 開示 學 應該
thitati nisinna a+gilana dhamma deseti sikkha karoti
ppr.(f.s.Nom.) m.s.Dat. m.s.Dat. m.s.Acc. 1s.fut. f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

七十、「我站著時,不要對無病而坐著的人說法」,應當學。

70. Standing, I will not teach Dhamma to a person sitting who is not ill: a training to be observed.

Pacchatogacchantisikkhapadam 走在前面(等)

71. Na pacchato gacchanti purato gacchantassa agilanassa dhammam desissami'ti,

```
後面
                              前面
                                                                           法
                                                                                        開示
                                                                 病
              gacchanta
                                        gacchanta
  pacchato
                             pura
                                                           a+gilana
                                                                         dhamma
                                                                                       deseti
adv. (f.s.Abl.) f.s.Nom.
                        adv.(m.s.Abl.) m.s.Dat.
                                                          m.s.Dat.
                                                                                       1s.fut.
                                                                       m.s.Acc.
```

sikkha karaniya.

學 應該 sikkha karoti f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

七一、「我走在後面時,不要對無病而走在前面的人說法」,應當學。

71. Walking behind, I will not teach Dhamma to a person walking ahead who is not ill: a training to be observed.

72.Uppathenagacchantisikkhapadam(靠著)路邊走

72. Na uppathena gacchanti pathena gacchantassa agilanassa dhammam desissami'ti,

不	路邊	走	道路	走	無病	法	開示
	uppatha	gacchanta	patha	gacchanta	a+gilana	dhamma	deseti
	m.s.Ins.	f.s.Nom.	m.s.Ins.	m.s.Dat.	m.s.Dat.	m.s.Acc.	1s.fut.

sikkha karaniya.

學 應該 sikkha karoti f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)

七二、「我靠著路邊走時,不要對無病而走在路上的人說法」,應當學。1

72. Walking beside a path, I will not teach Dhamma to a person walking on the path who is not ill: a training to be observed.

73.Thita-uccarasikkhapadam 站著大(小)便

73. Na thita agilana uccaram va passavam va karissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
大便
                                        小便
  不 站
                                                        作
                                                      karoti
   thitati
              a+gilana
                          uccara
                                      passava
                                                                    sikkha
                                                                               karoti
ppr.(f.s.Nom.)
             f.s.Nom.
                         m.s.Acc.
                                                       1s.fut.
                                                                    f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
                                       m.s.Acc.
```

七三、「我無病時不要站著大小便」,應當學。

73. Not being ill, I will not defecate or urinate while standing: a training to be observed.

74.Harite-uccarasikkhapadam 在農作物上大(小)便

74. Na harite agilana uccaram va passavam va khelam va karissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

```
不 農作物 無
                病 大便
                                  小便
                                           或叶
         a+gilana
                   uccara
                                 passava
                                              khela
                                                           karoti
                                                                      sikkha
                                                                               karoti
  n.s.Loc. m.s.Nom.
                   m.s.Acc.
                                 m.s.Acc.
                                              m.s.Acc.
                                                           1s.fut.
                                                                      f.s.Nom. grd.(f.s.Nom.)
```

七四、「我無病時不要在農作物上大小便、吐痰」,應當學。

74. Not being ill, I will not defecate, urinate, or spit on living crops: a training to be observed.

75.Udake-uccarasikkhapadam 在水上大(小)便

75. Na udake agilana uccaram va passavam va khelam va karissami'ti, sikkha karaniya.

个	水	無病	大使	或	小便	或	吐	或	作	學	應該
uc	laka	a+gilana	uccara		passava		khela		karoti	sikkha	karoti
n.	s.Loc.	m.s.Nom.	m.s.Nom		m.s.Acc.		m.s.Acc.	•	1s.fut.	f.s.Nom.	grd.(f.s.Nom.)

七五、「我無病不在水上大小便、吐痰」,應當學。

75. Not being ill, I will not defecate, urinate, or spit in water: a training to be observed.

~Padukavaggo sattamo nitthito.~

¹ 《四分比丘戒本》(T22.1040.1):「人在高經行處,己在下經行處,不應爲說法,除病,應當學。」「人在道,己在非道,不應爲說法,除病,應當學。」

pp.(m.p.Nom.) f.p.Voc. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom.

諸大姐!應當學習的規則已經誦出了。

The ladies, the Rules of Training have been recited.

Tatthayyayo pucchami: Kacci 'ttha parisuddha?

這裡 大姐 我問 是否 於此 清淨 tattha+ ayyayo pucchati kacci ettha pp. of parisujjhati adv. f.p.Acc. 1s.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

在這裡我問諸大姐:「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨?」

Herein I ask the ladies: Are you pure in this?

Dutiyam 'pi pucchami: Kacci 'ttha parisuddha?

第二 也 問 是否 於此 清淨 dutiya + api pucchati pp. of parisujjhati kacci ettha m.s.Acc. ind. 1s.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

第二次我再問:「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨?」

For the second times I ask the ladies: Are you pure in this?

Tatiyam 'pi pucchami: Kacci'ttha parisuddha?

第三 也 問 是否 於此 清淨 tatiya + api pucchati kacci ettha pp. of parisujjhati m.s.Acc. ind. ls.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

第三次再問:「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨?」

For the third times I ask the ladies: Are you pure in this?

Parisuddh'etth'ayyayo, tasma tunhi, evam etam dharayamiti.

清淨 大姐 沈默 如此 認為 在此 這 parisuddha+ ettha ayyayo tunhi evam eta dharati ta pp.(m.p.Nom.) adv. f.p.Nom. m.s.Abl. adv. adv. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr.

諸大姐於此(類戒)是清淨的,所以默然。我如此認定這件事。

The ladies are pure herein; that is why they are silent. So do I record it.

~Sekhiya nitthita.~

Adhikaranasamatha 解決案件的規則(=Bhikkhu Adhikarana samatha 1~7)

Ime kho pan'ayyayo sattadhikaranasamatha dhamma uddesam agacchanti.

這些 大姐 案件 止息 規則 而 七 agacchati pana+ayyayo satta+adhikarana+samatha dhamma uddesati f.p.Voc. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. m.s.Acc. 3.p.pr.

諸大姐!現在到了誦出七條解決案件的規則¹。

The ladies, the Seven Rules for the Settlement of Legal Processes come up for recited.

Uppannuppannanam adhikarananam samathaya vupasamaya,

生起集性止息平息upanna+upannaadhikaranasamathavupasamapp. ppr.(m.p.Gen.)n.p.Gen.m.s.Dat.m.s.Dat.

爲了解決平息不斷生起的案件,(有如下的規則:)

For the Settlement, for stilling of legal processes whenever they may arise (there are): --

1.當面法則 (Adhikarana samatha 2.)

Sammukhavinayo databbo.

面前、現前 規則 應給予 sammukha+vinaya dadati m.s.Nom. grd.(m.s.Nom.)

- 一、應遵行當面的法則。
- 1. A verdict "in the presence of" should be given.
- 2.憶念法則 (Adhikarana samatha 2.)

Sativinayo databbo.

憶念 原則 應給予 sati+vinaya dadati m.s.Nom. grd.(m.s.Nom.)

- 二、應遵行憶念的法則。
- 2. A verdict of mindfulness may be given.
- 3.不再痴狂的法則 (Adhikarana samatha 3.)

Amulhavinayo databbo.

痴狂 原則 應給予 a+mulha+vinaya dadati m.s.Nom. grd.(m.s.Nom.)

- 三、應遵行不痴狂的法則。
- 3. A verdict of past insanity may be given.

¹ 七條解決案件的規則:即七滅諍法。

4. 自白 (Adhikarana samatha 4.)

Patibbaya karetabbam.

表白、自白 使作 patibba karoti f.s.Dat. m.s.Nom.

四、依自白的內容處理。

- 4. Acting in accordance with what is admitted.
- 5.服從多數 (Adhikarana samatha 5.)

Yebhuyyasika.

多數決定 yebhuyasika f.s.Nom.

五、依多數(決定)。

- 5. Acting in accordance with the majority.
- 6.處罰犯罪的人 (Adhikarana samatha 5.)

Tassa-papiyasika

她 惡行者 tassa+papiyasika f.s.Nom.

六、(處罰)那犯罪的人。

- 6. Acting for her (the accused's) further punishment.
- 7.取銷 (Adhikarana samatha 7.)

Tina-vattharako'ti.

草 遮蓋 tina+avattharaka m. m.s.Nom.

七、如草覆蓋(雙方盡棄前嫌)。

7. Covering over as with grass.

Uddittha kho ayyayo satta adhikaranasamatha dhamma.

誦諸大姐七案件解決規則uddisatiayyayoadhikarana+samathadhammapp.(m.p.Nom.)f.p.Voc.n.m.p.Nom.m.p.Nom.

諸大姐,七條解決案件的規則已經誦出了。

The ladies, the Seven Rules for the Settlement of Legal Processes have been recited.

Tatthayyayo pucchami, kaccittha parisuddha,

這裡 諸大姐 我問 是否 於此 清淨 tattha ayyayo pucchati kacci ettha pp. of parisujjhati adv. f.p.Acc. 1s.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

在這裡我問諸大姐:「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨?」

Herein I ask the ladies: Are you pure in this?

Dutiyam'pi pucchami: Kacci'ttha parisuddha?

第二 也 問 是否 於此 清淨 dutiyam + api pucchati kacci ettha pp. of parisujjhati m.s.Acc. ind. 1s.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

第二次我再問:「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨?」

For the second times I ask the ladies: Are you pure in this?

Tatiyam'pi pucchami: Kacci'ttha parisuddha?

第三 也 問 是否 於此 清淨 tatiyam + api pucchati kacci ettha pp. of parisujjhati m.s.Acc. ind. ls.pr. ind. adv. m.p.Nom.

第三次再問:「妳們於此(類戒)是否清淨?」

For the third times I ask the ladies: Are you pure in this?

parisuddh'etth'ayyayo, tasma tunhi, evametam dharayamiti.

認爲 清淨 在此 大姐 因此 沈默 如此 這 parisuddha+ ettha ayyayo ta tunhi evam eta dharati pp.(m.p.Nom.) adv. f.p.Nom. m.s.Abl. adv. adv. m.s.Acc. 1s.pr.

諸大姐於此(類戒)是清淨的,所以默然。我如此認定這件事。

The ladies are pure herein; that is why they are silent. So do I record it.

~Adhikaranasamatha nitthita(解決案件的規則)~

Uddittham kho ayyayo nidanam,

誦 而 大姐 因緣 uddisati kho nidana pp.(m.s.Nom.) adv. f.p.Voc. m.s.Nom.

諸大姐!已誦出序言,

The ladies, the Introduction has been recited,

uddittha attha parajika dhamma,

誦 八 驅擯 規則 uddisati parajika dhamma pp.(m.p.Nom.) m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom.

已誦出八驅擯戒,

the eight Rules of Defeat has been recited,

uddittha sattarasa savghadisesa dhamma,

```
誦 十七 僧殘 規則
uddisati savghadisesa dhamma
pp.(m.p.Nom.) m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. pp.(m.p.Nom.)
```

已誦出十七僧殘戒,

the Seventeen Rules entailing Initial and Subsequent Meeting of the Savgha have been recited.

uddittha timsa nissaggiya pacittiya dhamma,

```
誦 三十 捨 懺 規則 uddisati parajika dhamma pp.(m.p.Nom.) m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom.
```

已誦出三十捨懺戒,

the Thirty Rules entailing Expiation with Forfeiture have been recited,

uddittha chasatthi sata pacittiya dhamma,

```
誦六十六一百犯懺悔規則uddisatiparajikadhammam.p.Nom.m.p.Nom.m.p.Nom.
```

已誦出一百六十六懺悔戒,

the one hundred sixty-six Rules entailing Expiation has been recited,

uddittha attha patidesaniya dhamma,

```
誦 八 悔過 規則
uddisati
pp.(m.p.Nom.) m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom.
```

已誦出八悔過戒,

the Eight Rules that must be Confessed have been recited,

uddittha sekhiya dhamma,

```
誦 眾學 規則
uddisati sekhiya dhamma
m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom.
```

已誦出眾學戒,

the Rules of Training have been recited,

uddittha sattadhikaranasamatha dhamma.

```
誦 七 案件 解決 規則 uddisati satta+adhikarana+samatha dhamma pp.(m.p.Nom.) n. m.p.Nom. m.p.Nom.
```

已誦出七滅諍戒。

the Seven Rules for the Settlement of Legal Processes have been recited.

Ettakantassa Bhagavato suttagatam suttapariyapannam

這諸多 彼 世尊 經 傳來 經 包含 ettaka ta Bhagavant sutta+agata sutta+pariyapanna m.s.Nom. m.s.Gen. m.s.Nom. m.s.Nom.

這諸多傳承、包含於彼世尊的戒經,

This much is in the Suttavibhavgha, including in the Suttavibhavgha, of the Blessed One,

anvaddhamasam uddesam agacchati.

每半月地 誦 去 agacchati adj. m.s.Acc. m.s.Nom. 3s.pr.

每由個月要誦出。

which comes up for recitation each fortnight.

Tattha sabbeh'eva samaggehi sammodamanehi avivadamanehi sikkhitabban'ti.

在這裡一切都和合歡喜無諍應學sabbasamaggasammodamanaa+vivadamanasikkhatim.p.Ins.m.p.Ins.m.p.Ins.m.p.Ins.grd.(m.s.Nom.)

在這(經分別)裡的,大眾都應該和合歡喜無諍地學習。

Herein all shoulld train in concord and agreement without dispute.

~Vittharuddeso catuttho nitthito.~

~Bhikkhunipatimokkham nitthitam.~

~ 比丘尼波提木叉竟 ~

Nissaye

Vinayapitake

Bhikkhunipatimokkha

比丘尼波提木叉

(巴漢英對照及文法分析)

from Chattha Savgayana (CS)

Released by Dhammavassarama 2552 B.E. (2008A.D.)

出版者:法雨道場

60652 台灣·嘉義縣中埔鄉同仁村柚仔宅 50 之 6 號

Dhammavassarama

No. 50 - 6, You-Tze-Zhai, Tong-Ren Village,

Chong-Pu, Chiayi 60652, Taiwan

Tel: (886)(5) 253-0029; Fax: 203-0813 E-mail: dhamma.rain@msa.hinet.net 網址: http://www.dhammarain.org.tw/ 郵政劃撥: 31497093 法雨道場

版次: 佛曆 2552 年(公元 2008 年) 7 月初版

【 版權聲名:若不增減本書內容,歡迎倡印,免費流通 】

★ 非賣品 ★